

*“I have showed thee new things
even hidden things
and thou didst not know them.”*

ISAIAH 48:6

ALSO BY ELLIS SKOLFIELD

Daniel Is Out of Order

Sunset of the Western Church

Hidden Beast

Demons in the Church

Hidden Beast II

SOZO, Survival Guide
for a Remnant Church

The False Prophet

THE
SHINING
MAN
WITH HURT HANDS

ELLIS H. SKOLFIELD

FISH HOUSE PUBLISHING



Copyright 2004

All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reproduced in any form or by any electronic or mechanical means including information storage and retrieval systems without specific permission in writing from the publisher except by a reviewer who may quote brief passages in review.

NOTE

Unless otherwise indicated
all Bible quotes are from the
King James Bible.

To protect the identities of individual multiples, all screen names, alter names, geographic locations and other identifying data are changed. Any similarity to people living or dead is purely coincidental. The quotes from *Lighthouse* chatroom are public domain. The private chats with the alters we could locate are used with permission.

ISBN 0-9628139-8-2

FISH HOUSE PUBLISHING

P. O. Box 453, Fort Myers, FL 33902, USA
www.fish-house.com

Printed in the United States of America

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

This book is dedicated to
The Shining Man
who was always central.

It is also to A, B, C, D, K, M and S,
Once you each had many minds,
but now you each have one.

Our apologies to those we failed.
Sometimes we didn't know how.

BLANK

Page 6

CONTENTS

	Preface	9
1	The Basics	11
2	The Causes	22
3	Barking Up the Wrong Model	31
4	Everyone Isn't So Nice	49
5	The Water	57
6	The Battles	71
7	The Shining Man	85
8	Cultural Hurdles	98
9	The Littles	120
10	The Shrine	138
11	Juniper	149
11	First Merge	162
13	Found Angel	179
14	Peace at Last	190
15	Looking Back	199
	<i>Appendix A</i>	205
	<i>Appendix B</i>	209

BLANK

PAGE 8

PREFACE

My journey into what may sound like a fairyland began ten years ago when I met a Jewess from St. Louis in a chatroom on the Internet. She was a multiple; in other words, she had several alter personalities in her body. I wasn't doing anything grand on the "net," just surfing the Christian rooms and defending the Bible. Nevertheless, I soon found myself in some weighty discussions with multiples about their so-called disorder and could anything be done to help them? Problem was, I knew even less about Multiple Personality Disorder than I did about astrophysics, a shortcoming that was soon corrected.

And guess who corrected it? Not some school dedicated to the study of abnormal psychology, but the multiples themselves, in a chatroom on MSN.com called *A Lighthouse*. It was a room for multiples only and it wasn't long before we had dozens. One or another multiple would ask for help with some pressing problem: a suicidal alter, an abusive husband, occult involvement, horrific flashbacks of an appalling past, drug use or oppressive darkones (translate that demons).

Helping with those problems is how it all began. It never occurred to us that we would be helping multiples with their basic problem, the MPD itself, but I soon discovered we were doing so almost by accident. I have now recorded about 8000 chat hours with multiples, including the awesome times when they merged. I now know what conditions cause MPD and have found a method of leading many to oneness. Regrettably, there were many I couldn't help, but you're going to read about several I could.

They are multiples no longer! You may not realize how monumental a statement that is, but it has to be mind-blowing to many mental health professionals! They have been struggling with the condition for years and their conventional wisdom holds that multiples are almost

beyond help. Oh, one can be put on medications and kept functioning (the usual treatment), but according to many therapists, a multiple will remain seriously disturbed for the rest of his/her unhappy and possibly short life. It isn't so, MPD is curable.

One multiple, a Japanese lady we'll call Lady Miyazaki, was totally integrated in three months (from October to December, 2003). A child multiple was integrated in just one day. Therapists might argue with my methods (from experience, I sometimes ask leading questions or tell alters what they can expect to happen next), but none can argue with the results! There used to be suicidal multiples out there who are now happy, medication free, well adjusted monominds! That's reality, and it isn't magic. It was done in private chats on the Internet and many of those chats are cited in this book.

Internet chats can be lengthy and very confusing (questions can be separated from answers by several lines) so every chat had to be edited for clarity. Sentence structures, spelling and punctuation were usually left unchanged unless it interfered with readability. Some chat quotes are actually compilations of several different chats, but all are accurate accounts of real events. Most transcripts are from my files, a couple are from memory and two are from phone calls.

The chats we chose to quote show various aspects of a multiple's inner world and the methods we used to help them. Most of the alters you will read about are now totally integrated, which means they no longer exist as individual entities. Nevertheless, all geographic locations, alter names, screen names and other identifying data have been changed to protect their identity. Any similarity to people living or dead is purely coincidental. The quotes from the *A Lighthouse* chat room are in public domain. The private chats of the alters we could locate are used with permission.

This book is to and for the multiples and their friends. Its goal is achieved if it shows even one multiple the road to freedom or teaches a counselor a more effective way to counsel. Though it will be almost impossible to believe, what is recorded here happened to real people in real time. So prepare yourself for the strangest literary ride you will ever have in your life, because this is not a work of fiction.

EHS

1 THE BASICS

TRIGGER WARNING FOR MULTIPLE READERS

*This book contains many trigger words,
but your story could not have been told
if those words had been left out.*

There are people among us with more than one personality in their bodies. Different individual entities for lack of a better way to describe them. It is believed that one of these many personalities is the “host” personality, the rest being “alter” personalities or fragments of the original host personality. Psychologists call this condition *Multiple Personality Disorder* (MPD) or the later *Dissociative Identity Disorder* (DID). This book is written with a deep and abiding love for those who have multiple “systems,” regardless of their exact diagnosis. More importantly, it’s about how to help them.

Here you will read many actual on-line chats with multiples; after all, it’s their story. Some of them are now monominds (i.e., they are fully merged and no longer multiples), others may be dead. Multiples can be anywhere and over 95% of them are women . . .

Glenda : I’m a Major in the military.

elskon : Great, and how long have you been in service?

Glenda : 18 years now, I’m going for 30.

elskon : Great, and how long have you known you were multiple?

Glenda : Most of my life, and I don’t know why I’m even in this room. I have a therapist.

elskon : Well, we’re glad you’re visiting. Been In therapy with him long?

Glenda : 15 years now, and he’s a she.

elskon : oh, ok. You on any psychotropic meds?

Glenda : Yes, some, and they do keep me going.

12 *The Shining Man*

Some mental health groups believe that one out of every hundred people in the United States could have some form of the condition. That's approximately 3,000,000 people in this country alone. Until now, nobody really knew how to care for them. In fact, mental health professionals admit that multiples have an extremely difficult, if not impossible, mental disorder to correct. One psychiatrist stated that no multiple patient of his ever lived more than 10 years.

Unfortunately, the Church isn't doing any better. Some of my multiple friends have been seriously hurt by a doctrinal belief common among clergymen that every alter inside a multiple is a demon. The attempted deliverances have terrified many an alter and driven many multiples away from the church. Here is an example:

elskon : Hi Jake, did you get to that church?

Redbird : Ya, and they were horrible to me.

elskon : What? I phoned them just yesterday and explained that you were a defending alter in a multiple system.

Redbird : Ya, they mentioned you.

elskon : I told them you needed help to break some heavy programming. Didn't they understand?

Redbird : naw, they said I was a demon.

elskon : Sheesh, I can't help you with Illuminati programming from 1400 miles away. It takes hands on and I don't know enough. I'm sorry, Jake.

Redbird : I told them about the programming, the mirrors, the spinners, the land mines, the guides and the mentors.

elskon : Yes, and?

Redbird : I told them I came to get away from all that and get help for everyone, specially June. She's been split so many times I don't even know who the core is anymore.

Though not usually dominant, the "core" is the birth-child, the central personality in a multiple's system. If the core is weak or hidden, a stronger alter will take the so-called "host" position and control the system's "inside" and "outside" activities. Some multiples don't know who their core is, but identifying the core is vitally important because all alters must eventually merge into the core if final integration is to be successful long term. Some therapists attempt to merge weaker

alters into the host, core or not. In my opinion, those efforts are destined to fail. The core is always central. Now back to Jake . . .

elskon : I'm sorry, Jake.

Redbird : They didn't believe me and said a lot of words to bind me and cast me out.

elskon : Mercy, that doesn't work on alters.

Redbird : ya, I ran off. I ain't going through that no more.

Jake wanted to be freed from his demons, but that church attacked the very alter who came for help. Therapists and clergymen are probably doing the best they can, but both are using treatments that don't work. After literally thousands of hours with dozens of multis, I am now of the opinion that MPD is not a mental disorder at all, but a unique multidimensional condition that can be treated by working exclusively in what multiples call their "inside." Alters are not demons, and in most instances there is nothing wrong with the multiple's mind. (*This is fully explained in later chapters*).

So where can one find all these multiples? On the Internet. The "net" is the most transparent media on earth. People on the net will tell you their most intimate secrets – details they wouldn't dream of sharing with their friendly minister, therapist or even their families. That makes the net a most effective place to counsel, even more effective than a psychiatrist's couch.

Dozens of multiples spend hours every day in chat "rooms" on the net. They do so for a variety of reasons, companionship, addictions, seeking help, or just the plain old human desire for a little understanding. On the net, there are private chat "rooms" and billboard "communities" for multiples only. I was on the net for several years as "elskon" (a screen name I've had since old DOS days) and I hosted one of those chatrooms, *A Lighthouse*, on MSN.com. It was in that chatroom and in private chats that I learned what multiples were all about.

There isn't any group of people on earth more in need of help than multiples. Of those I have known (well over a hundred), all have been physically, emotionally, sexually abused, or victims of Satanic ritual abuse (SRA) – abuses that sometimes continued into adulthood. Some

14 *The Shining Man*

multiples have also been psychologically programmed (translate that brainwashed) by Satanic cults, sadomasochists or occult groups like the Illuminati.¹ Most have few childhood memories, their “mems” as they call them, having been totally blocked out. Since every multiple has been grossly abused as an infant, it is reasonable to conclude that infant abuse is at least one cause of the condition.

Multis also have a host of chronic physical ailments: diabetes, asthma, hypertension, arthritis, etc., the incidence of these maladies appearing to be far above the statistical norm. Multis also have an impaired sense of touch and diminished peripheral vision.

Many alters are in severe emotional pain. If a dark alter “gets out” (i.e., gains control of the body), even for a few minutes, there is panic and horror – flashbacks of extreme physical, sexual, or ritual abuse – torture, injury and even death. The emotional pain can be so severe that hurting the body is the only way the alter knows to alleviate his suffering. Arms and legs are slashed with razor blades or broken glass. Dark alters know the difference between a longitudinal and a lateral cut to a vein. They know which is the most difficult to repair and most likely to kill. For some alters, suicide is the goal.

Others burn the body with cigarettes, candles or hot irons, which explains why many multis wear long-sleeved blouses, even on the hottest summer days. Multiples with dangerous alters keep a good first aid kit on hand to repair the damage done by their dark alters. A “defender”² might want to tell you about the “cutter” or a “burner” in their system, but in telling you, they are afraid you won’t like them or

¹The Illuminati is believed to be a satanic group founded in Rome in the late 1700s whose purpose is world domination under Lucifer. Many discount the Illuminati’s existence, but my experience with this multiple leads me to believe otherwise. Jake states himself that he is Illuminati programmed. He cannot read scripture posted on screen nor can he see or say Jesus’ name. He has alters inside who would like to come to God, but they are so dominated by the almost complete mind control of their “guides” and “mentors” they appear powerless to do so. There are many sites on the web about the Illuminati, www.conspiracyarchive.com/NWO/Illuminati.htm appears to be one of the more informative.

² Most multiple systems have one or more “defender” alters. Their purpose is to protect other alters or the body from physical or psychological harm. They usually remain inside, only coming out during times of stress or danger. Defenders are usually open, honest and easy to get along with. I rarely met a defender I didn’t like.

be their friend anymore, which of course isn't so. All multis are secretive about what they are going through, rightly fearing they would be shunned by society or institutionalized. No wonder so many are suicidal.

DIEDRE

At one hospital in California specializing in the treatment of multiples, out of a cell group of eight patients, only two remained alive after seven years of intense treatment by the best psychiatric help available to them. Of those two, Diedre was also suicidal. She had been hypnotized so often she would go under the moment she stepped into her psychiatrist's office. She was also being fed a large enough cocktail of psychotropic drugs to fell a hippopotamus. In addition, she needed to be hospitalized several times a year . . . but all the above barely kept her functioning.

Unable to manage the internal conflicts caused by her struggling alters, Diedre's blood pressure would soar to an unbelievable 240 over 140, even with medication. Diagnosed with stress related malignant hypertension, it's a miracle she didn't have a stroke, or die. Because of that stress, Diedre was considered terminal, with a life expectancy of not over six months. To say that she was desperate would be the understatement of the millennia.

She came into our chatroom by accident, but shortly after she began working with us, Diedre was no longer suicidal. In fact, she was reasonably cheerful, functioning fairly well, and as a bonus, her blood pressure dropped to 168 over 95. Still high, but manageable. Because of the successes we were having with Diedre and other so-called "incurables," we didn't need a lot of diplomas on the wall to conclude that the generally accepted psychiatric treatments for MPD were severely flawed, and this is what they appeared to be missing:

I simply believed what the multiples told me! They didn't sound demonic, delusional or insane. Everything they said sounded rational so I accepted as real what they said they were seeing.

16 *The Shining Man*

I didn't try to fix their "mental aberration." I didn't assume they were imagining what they were living through. Nor did I tell them it was all a fantasy or that they were hallucinating. I just accepted what they were experiencing as reality – a reality invisible to me! I figured you couldn't expect alters to believe you if you couldn't believe them so I accepted their reality. Simple? Sure, but I was going directly against a basic tenet of the mental health community: That there is no spiritual world and that everything the multiples experience was delusional.

Though secular psychologists are not as adamant about it as they used to be, as a group, they do not accept the reality of any world other than the material world in which we live. They see MPD as a mental disorder only – as the fragmentation of a person's psyche. Everything that multiples experience inside: their battles, their inner landscape, the darkones, the shining ones, oh yes, and their many alters, are thought by most mental health professionals to exist only in the patient's mind. Considering the complexity of what is usually going on in a multiple's inner world, it appears to me that therapists are trusting in an unlikely scenario, but they're not left with a lot of options if inside the patient's skull is all they can believe in.

RUTH

My first multiple friend was Ruth, whom I met on the net about ten years ago. Ruth was a Jewess in her late forties living in a little town in the Midwest, probably as safe an environment as anyone could wish. Over the next several months I got to know Ruth and her family quite well, talking to them on the phone, even swapping Christmas cards. Ruth had a nice little home and a stable family. Two of her four kids were attending a local college. But Ruth was also a frightened little rabbit, particularly around satanic holidays. It was several months before she trusted me enough to tell me her story, and even then it only came out in bits and pieces.

There wasn't a synagogue in the little city where Ruth was raised so her Jewish parents sent her to the local Baptist Church. After all, they didn't want their little girl to grow up a total heathen. But unknown

to them, the pastor and some of the elders of that church were active Satanists (one elder also happened to be the town's Chief of Police). For years they sexually and Satanic ritually abused that little girl. They repeatedly told her, "You're just a Jew, and since the Jews killed Jesus, it's all right for us to do what we are doing to you." Not very logical, but that is what they kept telling her.

So from infancy through her teens, Ruth was sexually and ritually victimized by the prestigious gentlemen of her local church. This all happened many years ago, but even today, Ruth gets phone calls threatening to kill her and her family if she ever reveals the identity of her tormentors or talks about the terrible things they did to her.

Now here's the point: As a result of that abuse, Ruth became a multiple. At the time, I didn't know zip about multiples so I was in way over my head, but as a conservative Christian of many years standing, I was positive that every one of those extra personalities in Ruth had to be an evil spirit.

elskon : You say you have many people inside?

Ruth : Yes, quite a few, some teenagers, lots of littles.

elskon : Littles? What are they?

Ruth : Child alters.

elskon : You mean you have little children running around in your head?

Ruth : Not in my head exactly, but inside. And they are not running around. They're good little kids and I love every one of them.

It never occurred to me that Ruth's "inside" might be anywhere but in her head. As I saw it, she was just an ordinary demonized person who was being deluded by some rather cunning spirits:

elskon : Mind if check to see if those entities are demons?

Ruth : Well, if you promise not to hurt anyone.

elskon : I sure don't intend to.

Ruth : OK then.

elskon : In the name of Jesus Christ, all evil spirits you are commanded to identify yourselves by your true names.

18 *The Shining Man*

Dead silence for a minute with no demons responding. Then Ruth said, “You sure have offended my littles and they don’t want me to talk to you anymore. They’re not demons.”

Well, that blunder didn’t cost us our friendship, but I sure wasn’t going about this the right way. Oh, I still disagreed with the secular therapists, but it was a while before I could accept the possibility that I, too, might be clinging to an irrational dogma that was as flawed as theirs. I just “knew” those so-called alter personalities were demons. I just “knew” those demons were trying to spiritually oppress these supposed multiples. I just “knew” those spirits could be cast out in Jesus’ name. I just knew it!

Guess what, I was wrong, but so were those psychologists!

There is a fierce battle going on inside most multiples, a dark side against a light side, darkones against shining ones, and Jesus said:

Mat 12:25-26 . . . every city or house divided against itself shall not stand: And if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself; how shall then his kingdom stand?

Though multiples are individuals with differing personalities, in most, their alters are on two sides. Those two sides are in constant conflict. “Light” alters in mortal combat against “dark” alters. “Shining ones” standing against “darkones.” Since it is a biblical given that Satan does not fight against himself, those “shining ones” and some of those alters can’t be on the devil’s side, and if they aren’t, they can’t be demons. They must be some other kind of spiritual being. So YES, there is a spiritual world, and YES there are demons; but NO, not everyone inside a multiple is a demon, and those entities that aren’t demons can’t be cast out. If you try to get rid of alters, they will ignore you or hide. You might think you had a successful deliverance, but those alters will still be there.

Then I met Abbie, a married lady from the Northeast. She had a quiet home life and a couple of nice pre-teen kids. She didn’t know she was a multi, just that she was having some strange flashbacks and emotional disturbances.

Abbie : You know, Elskon, I have the strangest feeling that someone else is looking out through my eyes.

elskon : Really? Can you see anything?

Abbie : Nope, but I can feel her.

elskon : OK, tell me what you do see.

Abbie : Well, it's pretty dark in here, but I see a door.

elskon : Ok, why not open it and look inside?

Abbie : I'm afraid, it's scary.

elskon : Well, I don't think opening a door can hurt you.

Please note that I'm not asking Abbie to imagine or visualize a thing. This is not guided imagery! I want to know what Abbie's sees all on her own, not what I suggest she see. Well, it took a few minutes for Abbie to summon up the courage to open the door, but then . . .

Abbie : Oh wow, I see a meadow and woods. I also see a girl. She is angry at me for something.

elskon : Well, she can't be too angry, you haven't done anything.

Abbie : She says I shouldn't have looked in. She says now that I seen her I got to help.

elskon : Help her how?

Abbie : She says her name is Sissy. She says she protects the little kids from the bad man. She's got children hiding in the woods.

Ooooooh, and I see the bad man, too.

Abbie saw a door, people inside (good and bad), a forest, a meadow, and her seeing "inside" wasn't unique. Over the next four years I met dozens of multiples who were seeing basically the same thing. Oh, the details varied, but "inside" they saw people, meadows, forests, lakes, rivers, mountains, waterfalls, fountains, doors and some beings they called "shining ones"¹ and "darkones."

So here's the question: Did all these multiples (many of whom didn't know each other) imagine exactly the same thing, or were they reporting on the reality of a world existing for them that the rest of us couldn't see?

¹ Want to hear a funny? Secular therapists don't get too excited if you see people or darkones (i.e., demons) inside, but if you also see shining ones (i.e., angels), you're in big trouble – they immediately assume you're schizophrenic. It seems they'll accept the existence of evil spirits, but won't accept the existence of angels. The joke is, if you accept the existence of either, you can't deny the existence of a spiritual world.

20 The Shining Man

All multiples have what they call an “inside” and an “outside.” Outside is where the body is (the material world in which you and I live), but inside is somewhere else. Inside is filled with light and dark alters and sometimes shining ones and darkones. The alter outside controls the body. There is usually a door or archway between the outside and inside. That door can be closed and locked, or left open. When an inside alter changes places with the outside alter, it’s called “switching.” If alters switch too fast, the body gets a headache, a so-called “switching headache.” All multiples experience them. So what is going on inside and who are these beings?

After several thousand hours with multiples, I have come to the conclusion that “inside” is the unseen spiritual world that surrounds us all!

As a Christian, I now needed to see if all this fit the Bible, and if so, what impact this view would have on the counseling of multiples. I began by looking at the nature of man from a biblical perspective.

Some denominations believe that man is only two part: (1) body, (2) soul-spirit. Others hold that we are three-part creatures, composed of (1) body, (2) soul, and (3) spirit. I have no interest in arguing the point, but I do use the three part model because it fits the multiple condition so well.¹

By definition, spirits reside in the spiritual world. That includes God, angelic beings, Satan, demons and our own spirits. It appears that the Holy Spirit guides us through our spirits in the spiritual world world.

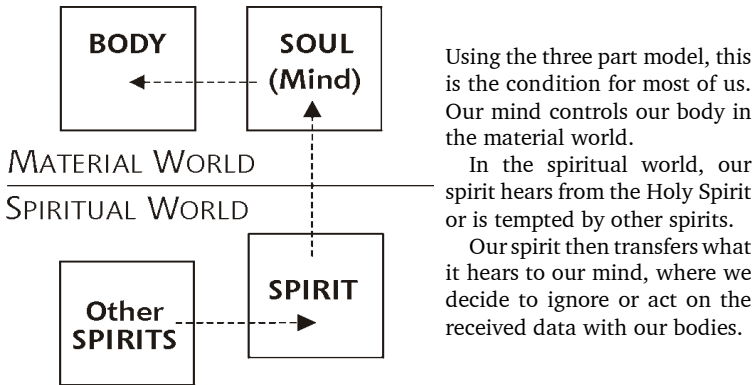
¹ Here is what the Bible states: 1Th 5:23 “I pray God your whole **spirit** and **soul** and **body** be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.” (KJV) That’s plain enough and since God made “man in His own image,” if man is only two part: (1) body, (2) soul-spirit, then God is only two part. (Gen 1:26).

Here is how we appear to be in the likeness of God: God has a spirit, the Holy Spirit and we have a spirit. Jesus became flesh; and we have flesh. God the Father is the will, and we have a will. Our souls make all our decisions in life, so our wills are our souls.

This uncovers an apparent paradox: Eph 2:6 “(God) raised us up with Him, and seated us with Him in the heavenly places, in Christ Jesus.” How can we be presently seated in heavenly places if those heavenly places are way out by the Andromeda Nebula somewhere? We couldn’t be. As a result, we conclude that “heavenly places” coexist in the same “space” as the material world. Call the spiritual world a different dimension if you like, but whatever you name it, it’s right here, all around us. If that is the correct view, then our spirits can indeed be presently seated in heavenly places with Christ, not just in a theological sense, but in reality.

Of course, our physical bodies reside in the material world and since man's body is controlled by his soul (mind), that soul must also reside in the material world.

Now I'm not trying to write new doctrine for the Church, but if we accept man as three part, we can draw a rough diagram of how we interact with both our own material world and the unseen spiritual world. Call the spiritual world a different dimension if you like, but whatever you name it, it is right here, all around us.



For us ordinary folks, there's an almost impenetrable wall between these two worlds and the Bible commands us not to try to see through it. However, mediums, satanic cultists and occultists of many stripes see through that wall all the time. Inadvertently, so do multiples, and their ability to do so is what gives us an approach through which we can help them.

2 THE CAUSES

For many infants, something goes terribly wrong early on. The adults who were supposed to nurture them, abused them instead. In the example below, a high-achieving adult alter is telling what happened to a young alter in her system many years ago. Missi was that alter's name and it was her duty to be out when the body was being abused.

Megan : You want me to tell you what happened to her? No matter what it was?

elskon : Just tell me what you want to.

Megan : Missi loved her father very much....he loved her...she was always very special to him.....he trained her all of her childhood to be his...

elskon : I see.

Megan : Once when she went to church she accepted Jesus, and he beat her badly when she got home because he said she was his and could not be given to anyone.

Megan : Then the nights came....

Megan : But he was too weird....

Megan : He had a glass tube of some kind.....

Megan : She got scared....

Megan : he cut her badly....he got mad and said, "All I ever wanted was for you to love me. If you had just loved me, everything would have been so different...."

Megan : But he didn't stop cutting her.

Megan : He left her on the bed....

Megan : She was bleeding very badly...

Megan : The voices in her head were trying to help her....but she didn't want to be helped....

Megan : She went into the bathroom, but this time it was too bad...she couldn't stop the bleeding.... She tried to pray, but couldn't, so she just waited until someone found her.

Megan : That is all I can write...

elskon : That's OK

elskon : Look at her face closely. Who is she?

Megan : I don't want to do that again

elskon : You haven't done it for me yet.

Megan : You want me to see her that day or the way she is now.

elskon : I want you to see who she was.

Megan : ok

Megan : I know who. I wasn't here then.

Megan came into the system much later. Multiples are sometimes abused over a period of years, so alters can be of various ages – from little babies to young adults. Megan (this system's strong alter) didn't come into the system until after Missi tried to kill the father. Fleeing from the emotional impact of that attempted murder may have been the traumatic event that brought Megan into being.

Megan : I do not want to offend you...but I think I need to be alone for a little while....

elskon : I am not offended.

Megan : Thank you.....I am going to go to a special place inside....If I am better, maybe I will talk to you later if you are not too busy.

And then there's Kara, a victim of satanic ritual abuse (SRA). Kara, a defender, is "outside," describing what is going on "inside." At this time we didn't know who the core of her system was. What follows is very disturbing so you might not wish to read it, but the abuses that lead to multiplicity are never pretty.

Kara : There's this long hall with doors on both sides.

elskon: Yes?

Kara : Sara is walking down the hall. It's unsafe here and I'm scared for her.

elskon : Well, I won't leave you, but be careful.

Kara : She stops at each door and looks at it.

Kara : They all got symbols and pictures.

24 The Shining Man

Kara : I got to warn her, if she goes in any doors except the one at the end, she'll be trapped.

You have to listen to a defender when they give you a warning. They are usually right.

elskon : Mercy, warn her if that is the right thing to do.

Kara : It's getting awful dark, lots of shadow things.

elskon : OK, I will ask God to please send light.

We read in the Bible, "If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove." Now I haven't moved any mountains lately and I don't know of anyone else who has, but what if Jesus was speaking of the spiritual world and not the material world in which we live? What if Kara was indeed describing events in her spiritual world? If so, then God's word should be visibly effective there. I quoted a verse from the Old Testament, Genesis 1:3.

elskon : "And God said, Let there be light: and there was light."

Kara : Wow, how did you do that? Are you a wizard?

elskon: No, LOL. (*LOL is net-talk for laughing out loud*)

Kara : A warlock?

elskon : No, I'm just a servant of Jesus.

It absolutely floored me to see a Bible verse come to life right before my eyes, but I have done it so many times now that it's no longer a shock. In fact, I quote Scripture routinely when working "inside."

Kara : We're at the end now. There is a huge door here. Bad pictures on it, upside down cross, looks like goat's head and upside down stars. I'm scared.

elskon : I think you will be OK, want to open it?

Kara : can't, it's locked

elskon : Ok, look around for a key.

Kara : some dark things standing here... the big one has a chain on its neck... keys on it.

Kara : o God, they're coming at me

Kara is obviously terrified, and so am I. This is my first head-to-head face off with demons inside so I don't know what to do. I type, "The angel of the LORD encampeth round about them that fear him, and delivereth them," Psa 34:7.

elskon : Dear Lord Jesus, please send help.

Kara : Shining men coming... fighting with the dark things

elskon : , whew, praise the Lord <smile>

Kara : it dropped the key

elskon : ok, I think you can open the door now.

Long silence and I'm getting worried. I'm still new at this so I didn't know how risky opening that door could be (I now know that doors shouldn't be opened without first arming the alter and letting her know that some really terrible stuff might be back there). I'm praying like crazy, too, and then . . .

Kara : Ooooooooooooooooooooo

Kara : Slab of cement in the middle of the room.

Kara : covered with blo

Kara : bloo

Kara : bld

Kara: Caaan't say it.

elskon : Oh, I think I understand, it's covered with bl**d.¹

Kara : Yeah, that.

Kara : Iron rings at the corners.

Kara : The girl's all tied up, spread out. No clothes.

Kara : She's covered with that b stuff.

elskon : Oh my.

Kara : Screaming.

Kara Lots of eyes all around, hands making signs on her tummy.

elskon : Do you recognize any faces?

Probably shouldn't have asked that question, but I was pretty angry and wanted to nail those perverts to the wall if I could.

Kara : Only see bad eyes, but I think I otta know them.

Kara : Putting things inside her. It hurts real bad.

Kara : she's ble . . . I can't

elskon : I understand, bl**d*ng.

Kara : Yeah

elskon : Look at the girl, see who she is.

Kara : Can't, I'm ffffraid.

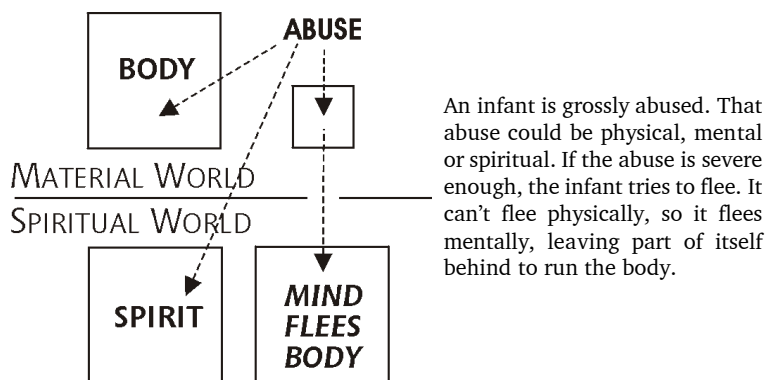
¹ Some words can "trigger" a multiple into an almost catatonic state, the worst being; blood, kill, die, pain, hurt, cut, fire, burn, sex, and any form of abuse. All multis are not hurt by triggers nor are all triggered by the same words. Multiples who are susceptible to trigger words usually replace the vowels in a trigger word with asterisks.

26 *The Shining Man*

elskon : Well, try anyway.

Kara : <Crying, she's me when I was little.

Megan and Kara's accounts are far from unique, they could be told a hundred times over. Since both were Christians, they accept the reality of a spiritual world and that made them relatively easy to work with. Both are now fully integrated monominds just like you and I. How they became monominds is what this book is about.

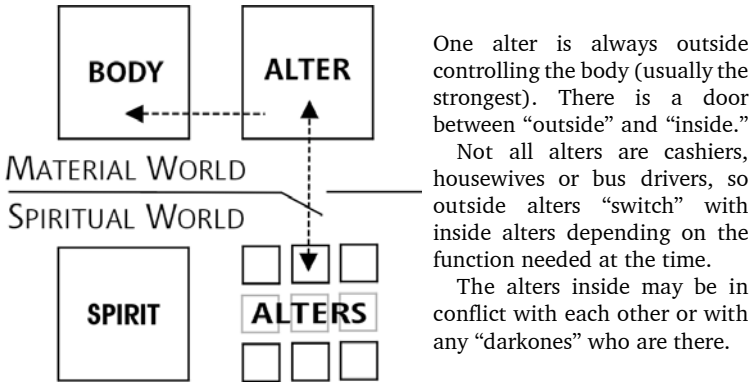


So the mind flees the body, but the whole mind can't flee or the body wouldn't be able to function. The baby wouldn't be able to eat, drink, cry, wet its diapers, or do any of the other things a child does in infancy. Some of the mind must remain behind, and what remains becomes that first alter. That alter then carries the memory of the severe abuse that caused the core to flee. That alter also holds the memory of the trauma that brought it into being.

Most mental health professionals might counsel one or two multiples during their whole career, but over the next couple of years we met too many to count. I've talked to hundreds of alters, most were "light," or good, a few were "dark," and dangerous. Through them it soon became obvious that MPD was the result of gross child abuse.

Unfortunately, abusive guardians don't change their behavior after one cruel act, their injurious conduct continues, sometimes for years. But now the infant has found a mechanism that enables it to hide from

its pain – it has learned to flee “inside” and each time it does, a new alter is formed. Then their picture might look a bit like this:



There can be any number of alters in a system, but usually there are from six up to a couple of dozen.¹ Whichever alter is out controls the body. With rare exceptions, each alter behaves as an independent mind with its own thoughts and goals. Exactly how they are formed may be open to question, but it soon becomes obvious that these alters are separate entities.

REDBIRD

Redbird, a multiple in her late 40s, used to visit our chatroom from time to time. She was a practicing Satanist² so she had no reason to support or reinforce us, nevertheless, her defender told us they saw angels inside several times, plus once outside when her coven went to attack a church. Rhonda a former Satanist and a multiple (now a Christian) is also in this chat . . .

¹A biblical counselor in Alabama worked with one person who had over 1150 alter personalities. I worked with one multiple who had over 350. Only a dozen or so of her alters had names or were fully functional, so they may not have been alters in the usual sense. However, the system’s regular defenders saw them as real, and trained them, so I don’t doubt their existence.

² All of Redbird’s alters were not Satanists. One of her child alters trusted in Jesus and this defender attends church and asks questions about God.

28 *The Shining Man*

Redbird : shining ones do not come around, cause the pointy wing ones hit them.

elskon : Well, the warrior shining ones are much stronger than the pointed winged ones. If they see you need help they will drive the pointed winged ones away.

Redbird : do not know what warrior shining ones looks like.

elskon : How many wings did the shining ones you saw have?

Redbird : the one I saw had three wings on each side, it had an off-white robe and a gold belt.¹

elskon : Ah, those are the healing shining ones, warrior shining ones only have two wings on each side and are dressed in brilliant white.

Redbird : saw that one night when our cult group was coming against a church to do ritual.

elskon : a shining one was defending the church?

Redbird : ya, this one had a huge sword that when it pull it out, fire came from it, freaked me out.

elskon : That's sounds like a warrior angel, nobody messes with them.

Rhonda : we have seen them too Redbird.

Redbird : there was lightning come from the wings

elskon : Redbird, the Shining Man sends them to help Rhonda all the time.

Rhonda : They fought our battle for us, sent the others running and we barely had to do anything . . . it was incredible. It blows us away that shining ones would do that just for us.

Redbird : but it is not good to talk about shining ones, causes trouble for me.

elskon : I understand, but when you see one. Ask for his help, nobody will be able to stand against him.

Redbird : when that shining thing blew the trumpet, the whole coven ran for cover and it was not a go.

elskon : I hear that.

¹ Multiples see different kinds of shining ones. That was discovered in other chats by asking God to send angels for a specific purpose and then asking the alters to describe those angels. Shining ones with one wing per side were messengers, those with two wings per side were warriors, and those with three wings per side were healers. Many multiples described the angels they encountered in this same way.

Though Redbird was unaware of it, a strong dark alter now seizes control of the body for a one-liner. How I knew this dark alter was not a demon is explained later in the book.

Redbird : WE WILL MAKE SURE THAT THIS ONE WILL NOT SEE FREEDOM, YOU KNOW WE HAVE PREVENTED, PPL FROM HELPING HER, UNDERSTAND?

Now Redbird is back in control . . .

Redbird : when the shining thing blew the trumpet, more shining things came.

Rhonda : they will come if you ask Red... its awesome, goes against EVERYTHING we've ever been told, but it's true.

Elskon : Sure, and the warrior angels always win.

That dark alter again . . .

Redbird : SEE, WE WILL MAKE SURE THAT NO ONE, NOT EVEN THE SHINING ONES WILL HELP, MENTORS HAVE TRAINED US AND HER.

With that parting shot and with that dark alter still in control, Redbird left the chatroom, probably to go rattle some chains in one of the so-called deliverance rooms. The hosts in those rooms attempt to drive out what they believe to be “those demon alters.” Multis can be attracted to such places because they claim to have a magic bullet that can cure multiplicity, but it isn't so.

Undoubtedly, those so-called deliverance rooms are well-intended, but it won't change the fact that alters aren't demons, and if they aren't, they can't be driven out. Those rooms have damaged more than one multiple and led them away from the truth. I hear about those multis occasionally, still confused, still multiple, still cutting or burning, still seeking a deliverance that never comes.¹

I sent a draft of this book to Grayfox, a former multiple, now a monomind. Here are a few of her thoughts . . .

¹The above is not intended as a criticism of true deliverance ministries. Deliverance is indeed needed for demonized people. but it is only applicable for multiples under special circumstances. Trying to deliver a multiple from her alters sends the wrong message to the alters – that they are demons rather than individual entities who can be brought to the Lord.

30 *The Shining Man*

Dear Elskon;

This whole book registers in my entire being as true. It's what happened to me at the split of our/my personality. I have no doubt that you have explained the real reason multiples split. I also believe MPD to be a mechanism of God, provided for children, to help them survive horrific abuse.

No one but you could have described our world as you have done in this book. I still wonder sometimes if you aren't a multiple yourself. :) Who knows what enabled you to walk with us and do the work you do. I don't know, but I do know this: those who will read and use this book with multiples can do a world of good for the ones still suffering the turmoil and conflict that we used to. Thank you so much for your help.

Grayfox

3 BARKING UP THE WRONG MODEL

You are going to read many things in this book that will totally freak you out, guaranteed! What multiples see and do will appear totally unbelievable to you, and I do mean unbelievable. Nevertheless, the accounts recorded here, in the words of the multiples themselves, are what some of them experience every day of their lives. So before assuming that everyone in this book is a card-carrying lunatic (including me for writing it), you might look at the results. By accepting what multiples see inside as real and going with their flow, many multiples are no longer multiples. Their inner conflicts are gone and they are now of one mind just like you and I.

Their inner world may not seem real to you, but it is very real to the multiple. To help them, one must deal with their reality. Feeding them a load of medications or shouting instructions to them while standing on the bank of their emotionally raging rivers doesn't work. You have to get in their boat with them and start rowing. If you don't like the "spiritual world" model no matter how well it fits, that's ok, call it whatever you like. But with dozens of multiples seeing basically the same things inside, it is patently ridiculous to deny that an inner world exists for them. The clergymen and secular therapists who think otherwise can cause immeasurable harm.

elskon : Hi <smile>

Abigail : hi

elskon : I'm elskon, I try to help multiples.

Abigail : ok

Abigail I'm real scared, elskon

32 *The Shining Man*

elskon : I know, it is frightening at first. Want to tell me about yourself?

Abigail : my name is Abigail, I'm 24, single, live in Chicago.

elskon : Are you a Christian?

Abigail : I try to be one but my church they call me crazy.

And so another multiple is alienated from her church . . .

elskon : Well, accepting Jesus as your Savior is what makes you a Christian, not what your church might say. <smile>

Abigail : thank you, I think I figured that out tonight.

elskon : So tell me why you think you are multiple?

Abigail : well, my family doctor he referred me to this other doctor because I kept hearing these voices calling to me, I kept hearing them over and over again.

elskon : Yes, go on.

Abigail : and then finally I tried to look for them and I saw them inside of me. Some were smiling and others were not. And I could hear them like they were living right inside of me.

So far so good, she sounds like a multiple who can already see inside. She also sees two sides, some alters are smiling, others are not. If those people "inside" were only demons, she would probably have seen a much darker picture than she's describing. But look at what happens next . . .

Abigail : but the doctor he told me I was delusional, that my mind was making them up to cope with things I don't want to talk about. That the voices I hear and that people I see don't really exist.

elskon : I'm sorry about that, he obviously doesn't understand MPD very well.

Abigail : That's what he say anyway,

elskon : Ah well, if you are a multiple, in my opinion, those people really do exist, but they are not inside your head. What you are seeing "inside" is actually a window into the spiritual world. They are in the spiritual world.

Abigail : so he put me on these meds

Abigail : zoloft and chlorpromazine

So rather than finding out WHY this girl was hearing voices and seeing people inside, this licensed professional tried to medicate her

“aberration” away. An accepted practice, but it was only a chemical band-aid that did nothing for her multiplicity.

Abigail : and he said that I should see them go away, but they are still there calling to me. And I get these horrid headaches. when I try to find them.

Abigail : but I am so scared

elskon : I understand, and I'm sorry.

Accounts like this never fail to make me a bit sick. Abigail's headache gives us a clue to what is actually happening. Trying to see inside would have the same effect on her as trying to switch, thus the switching headache. No matter the cause, those meds were loosening her already precarious hold on reality.

elskon : Can you see inside now?

Abigail : yes, if I try hard enough

elskon : Just relax, this will be easier than you think.

Abigail : ok

elskon : What do you see inside, do you want to tell me?

This is not guided imagery. I am not directing her thoughts nor asking her to imagine what I want her to see. I want her to tell me what she is experiencing without any prompting from me.

Abigail : are you going to call me crazy?

elskon : Of course not, I understand multiples.

Abigail : I see this place with gorgeous trees and scenery

Abigail : and a river

elskon : great

Abigail : behind it are these mountains.

elskon : OK

Abigail : They are gorgeous.

elskon : I believe you.

Abigail : there's children there, about four of them.

She is not only a multiple, but her inside world appears to be beautiful and free from dark influences. If nothing interferes, it would take only a few weeks to get her fully integrated.

elskon : There is nothing to fear now. What you are telling me is quite common for multiples. Seen it a hundred times.

elskon : Do you have adults, too?

34 *The Shining Man*

Abigail : I don't know what you are asking

elskon : Do you have big people inside as well?

Abigail : yes but I haven't been able to get to them yet to actually talk with them.

elskon : Really, why not?

Abigail : I can't get to them because of the pills. The meds get me so confused.

elskon : <sigh> you may have to get off those pills

Abigail : but then people are going to make fun of me again

elskon : Why?

Abigail : because they don't believe me

elskon : Well, I believe you, just don't tell them.

Abigail : but won't my doctor be upset?

I guess Abigail was more worried about getting her doctor upset than in getting better because I never saw her again. Maybe she stays at home in a drug-induced semi-zombie state, or maybe she's institutionalized. In either case it's a tragedy.

Early on, and to my deep regret, I made a bundle of blunders that alienated some multiples. If nothing else, it caused some to distrust me. Most multiples are women and I, being a male, wasn't overly responsive to feminine sensitivities. Sometimes I was too pushy or too rigid. One has to be empathetic and intuitive when working in the multiple's inner world. Using rigorous methods to get a multiple to deny what she sees with her own eyes damages the multiple. You have to let the multiples teach you, being careful that you're not being bamboozled by an alter under demonic control.

Because the face is so strongly tied to the identity of the individual, it is better not to see the person you are working with. If you are watching the face, you will never notice the subtle changes in voice or word usage that indicates a switch. Multiples are past masters at hiding their condition from even the most experienced observer.

Sometimes going inside can be difficult. Darkones or defenders might be blocking the door, or the outside alter might be too afraid to try, or be in denial. Others will take you right in without a second thought. LadyAnn was one of those.

elskon : Please tell me a bit about yourself: Your age, educational background, children, race, and what part of the country you are from?

LadyAnn : I am 34, the youngest of four kids, I have a masters degree in mathematics and work for a Defense Contractor in Oregon. I am female, married and divorced, 2 children. I grew up in Boston and I'm Irish.

elskon : I see. Do you presently have a therapist or counselor?

LadyAnn : We saw a counselor for a while after we moved here, but not anymore. He was not prepared to deal with MPD.

LadyAnn : I have been prescribed medications to quiet the voices,,, but I find if I do not listen to them, that they try harder to be heard, and they do more physical damage if I quiet them than if I listen to them.

Unless there is something physically wrong with the brain, a chemical imbalance or a drug induced hallucination, in my opinion there are only two reasons a person might hear voices: (1) if they have demons, or (2) if they have alters. And did you notice that "physical damage" bit? I didn't and we paid for it later.

elskon : Do you have any childhood memories?

LadyAnn : some, yes

elskon : How early are your memories?

LadyAnn : mine,,, or Rose's ?

Right away you can suspect she is a multiple telling you about one of her alters.

elskon : <smile> yours. I haven't met Rose yet. I will ask her the same question.

LadyAnn : I have many littles, one is as small as maybe 2...

elskon : that's fine, I get along great with the littles. :)

LadyAnn : Rose is the strongest one in us

Note the "us." The use of a plural pronoun is another clue. This person either has demons or is a multiple.

LadyAnn : don't have a lot of memories, :-(just a flash here and there. *Net talk for a frown is* :-(or :/(

The "Strong Alter" host usually lacks early memories because the child alters who were out in those early years have them. We deal with those memories as we talk to each alter.

36 *The Shining Man*

elskon : Have you met your alters?

LadyAnn : oh,,, hummm most of them

elskon : good

elskon : Can you see inside?

LadyAnn : yes...

elskon : Good again.

LadyAnn : Well, I am not sure what others see inside, but we have created a home inside for everyone, with their own private place,,, a safe place,,, most have their own rooms, unless they have chosen something else.

All multiples have an inner landscape of some kind. It is one of the indications that someone is really a multiple. Inner landscapes can be totally different from multiple to multiple.

elskon : Each multiple is a bit different, but so far, nothing strange here.

LadyAnn : my big thing is... I am not sure I have any “dark” alters... they all seem to serve a purpose.

elskon : well, you are hearing voices, right?

LadyAnn : oh yes :-)

elskon : do you hear them now?

LadyAnn : Yes, singing, crying, talking,, alllll the time,,, Big Dude is always screaming at me,,, and Rose singing, Rose crying,, the mother calling her children...

elskon : OK, lets find out if any of them are darkones . . .

elskon : In the name of Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh, all evil spirits, you are commanded to remain totally silent unless commanded to speak.

Demons must obey a command given in Jesus’ name, they have no alternative. So if there are demons in this system they are now bound to silence. Notice that I didn’t say, “In the name of Jesus, *I command you* to silence,” just “In the name of Jesus *you are commanded* to silence.” It is Jesus who has total authority over demons, not you, and certainly not “I” and I sure don’t want to get between Jesus and some demon. So NEVER use the personal pronoun. That puts you in a head-to-head confrontation with an evil spirit. I just give the basic command and stand aside. This is Jesus’ battle, not yours or mine!

elskon : Did that silence some voices?

LadyAnn : hummmm, no.

elskon : Then all the voices you hear are alters.

LadyAnn : I truly believe I have no demons... the pastor in my last church wondered if there were demons,,, but decided after prayer, and commanding them to leave, that they were not

elskon : But it is possible you may have darkones (demons) within an alter, particularly in Big Dude. Mind if I check?

LadyAnn : hummm, if you get him here talking to you, we may not be able to get him to leave.

elskon : I am not going to ask him to come out.

LadyAnn : he talks in all caps, and yells at everyone. Always thinks he is right,,,

elskon : All caps doesn't frighten me <grin>

LadyAnn : LOL, ok (*LOL is net talk for laughing out loud*)

elskon : I am now going to see if any alters are actually darkones in disguise. Please keep the door open now so all inside can hear. You listen carefully, too, OK?

LadyAnn : k

elskon : In the name of Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh, any evil spirit disguised as an alter, you are commanded to identify yourself, first by your alter's name and then by your actual name.

elskon : now listen

LadyAnn : Zabba

LadyAnn : ooh, Zabba

elskon : OK, we will deal with her later. Just remember she is there and that you do have a darkone.

LadyAnn : Have not heard from her for over 2 years

elskon : One more test, OK?

LadyAnn : yes

elskon : In the name of Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh, all evil spirits, you are commanded to identify yourself by your actual names.

elskon : now listen

LadyAnn : Zabba

I checked twice and am now sure this system has a demon named Zabba. There are other things we need to take care of right now so we'll deal with that demon later.

LadyAnn : thats all I am hearing

elskon : That's OK, so you only have one darkone.

LadyAnn : Don't want to hear from her again, she was bad

38 *The Shining Man*

elskon : Since she is a darkone, bad is to be expected. I know of NO good darkones. We will deal with her later. Can you see inside now?

LadyAnn : o yes

elskon : Great, please describe your landscape for me.

LadyAnn : lots of easy chairs, a fireplace... and a waterfall on one side of the room, in the corner.

Notice I did NOT suggest that LadyAnn see a “waterfall,” she saw it on her own. Many multiples see either a waterfall or a fountain without prompting from anyone, so it isn’t imaginary. There are way too many witnesses to believe otherwise.

elskon : a waterfall?

LadyAnn : yes,, water is very calming, and soothing,, the sound,, the feel....

elskon : Do you know what it is?

LadyAnn : no, what is it?

elskon : You are a Christian so you probably have . . .

elskon : Rev 22:1 “And he showed me a pure river of Water of Life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb.”

LadyAnn : ???? wow??? is that what the water fountain is??

elskon : Yes, I believe that is what it is. Rev 21:6 says, “I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the Water of Life freely.”

LadyAnn : wow! its like a bunch of rocks on the wall, and the water runs down it, into a little pool at the bottom...

elskon : Here is a glass. Have a drink.

LadyAnn : not good to drink,, its not clean

elskon : That’s impossible, if that’s the Water of Life it’s clear as crystal and absolutely pure.

LadyAnn : hummmmm, let me try it.

LadyAnn : its good water, elskon..

elskon : I thought it might be. <wry smile>

LadyAnn : !!!!!!! wow!!!!!!

elskon : Yes?

LadyAnn : we’re working with my friend Janice, to make sure everyone had their own safe room,,,,, but we have never explored this kind of thing,,, although she is a Christian.

elskon : Most Christian's don't know anything about this.

For years I wouldn't write about working inside for fear that the bad guys might learn how to do so from my book. I finally realized that the Satanists and occultists already know how, the only people who don't are the Church and the mental health professionals.

elskon : OK, now look at the waterfall, is there a light there?

LadyAnn : no...

elskon : lets pull the blinds and look out the window.

LadyAnn : yes

LadyAnn : :-) the sun is shining in... on the waterfall!!!

LadyAnn : when I opened the curtains, the light shines on it

elskon : OK, what is outside the window?

LadyAnn : grass, big trees

elskon : What does the sky look like?

LadyAnn : blue sky, clouds

The condition of her sky is important. If she had any serious conflicts in her system or was under demonic influence or attack, her sky would have been dark or stormy.

elskon : very good

LadyAnn : The waterfall is really big, it's taller than I am,,,

elskon : OK, I am sending you in some hyssop cuttings. Please plant them around the waterfall and water them from the falls. They will grow quickly.

LadyAnn : k

elskon : I will also ask Jesus to enlarge your pool, you are probably going to need it.

Now a child alter pops out without warning. Hard as it may be to believe, each child alter has a different personality and sounds totally different than any of the "biggs" in their system . . .

LadyAnn : ddos mes gttds ta hewp pttts dem der

LadyAnn : pwes

elskon : yes, you can help

LadyAnn : gudio mes liks da watr

elskon : You can swim in it if you want to.

LadyAnn : mes cans pwa in da watr reli?

Now back to LadyAnn . . .

LadyAnn : sorry

elskon : Is this LadyAnn? Bet you just got a headache.

40 The Shining Man

LadyAnn : Yeah, how did you know?,,, that was Rose,,,

LadyAnn : She likes the waterfall,, always wants to play IN it, lol

elskon : Well, she may. I asked Jesus to make the pool larger.

LadyAnn : hmmm,,, ok

LadyAnn : the plants you gave me are soooo green,,, and already growing.

Did you notice? By faith you can send objects into the spiritual world and they are real there. That reflects a phrase in Scripture, “and calleth those things which be not as though they were” (Romans 4:17). But it’s a sobering thing to do. One must be careful not to say anything ungodly. I believe judgment would come rather swiftly on any Christian who abused the privilege.

elskon : great. You can take a few leaves from them and make some tea.

LadyAnn : k

elskon : Here is why you want to do it . . .

elskon : Psa 51:7 “Purge me with hyssop, and I shall be clean: wash me, and I shall be whiter than snow.”

Long, long silence . . .

elskon : you still there?

LadyAnn : :-(parts of me will never be clean again. :-((*net-talk for a sad face*)

I really hurt for a multiple who says something like that. All their lives they have carried a crushing burden of guilt for abuses over which they had no control. But that is what the Cross is all about, their guilt is why Jesus died . . .

elskon : That’s not so, there is nothing Jesus cannot cleanse, here is a bar of hyssop soap. Jump in the pool and use it.

In the old Testament, symbolic acts like placing blood on the lintel and doorposts (Exodus 12:7) and looking on the brazen serpent (Numbers 21:8) resulted in physical life for Israel. In the same way, symbolic acts performed in the spiritual world (like using hyssop to wash in a fountain filled with the Water of Life) do appear to cleanse alters of at least some of their guilt and shame.

LadyAnn : okkkk

elskon : Here also is a large beach towel to dry off with. I am a gentleman, I won't look.

LadyAnn : thank you.

elskon : smiling

LadyAnn : I don't want to make the water dirty,,,

LadyAnn : I can't get into it,,,

LadyAnn : :-(

LadyAnn : <crying

elskon : It is self cleansing, you cannot make it dirty no matter how hard you try.

LadyAnn : can put my hands in it, but nothing else.

elskon : Why Not? That water is from the throne of God. No human, no matter how dirty, can harm it.

elskon : Just try, one foot at a time. Jesus made the pool bigger so you could.

Unknown to me, a strong alter behind the scenes was commanding LadyAnn not to get in the water. So here is when we first run into her so-called defender, "Big Dude." Despite his claim, he was no defender at all, but another type of alter called a "punisher."

LadyAnn : I SAID NO.

LadyAnn : WE WILL NOT GET INTO THE WATER

elskon : Ah, Big Dude. You may not want to, but LadyAnn does.

LadyAnn : SHE WILL NOT DISOBEY ME, OR SHE WILL PAY THE PRICE.

LadyAnn : SHE KNOWS NOT TO DISOBEY ME.

elskon : If you want to talk to me, stop those stupid caps and talk like a human being.

On the Internet, using all caps is like shouting and it's very impolite. Though sometimes used legitimately to make a point, darkones or dark alters use all caps to intimidate, as is the case here.

LadyAnn : WHO DO YOU THINK YOU ARE?

elskon : I will tell you

elskon : I am elskon, a servant of God and of His Son Jesus. So who are you, my man?

LadyAnn : AND I AM HER GUARDIAN, TO MAKE SURE SHE DOES WHAT IS RIGHT AND SAFE.

LadyAnn : I KNOW YOU ARE GOOD AND WORK FOR HIM.

elskon : If you know my God, you just might listen to what I say. I am in His service.

42 *The Shining Man*

LadyAnn : WE WILL NOT GET IN THE WATER. THAT IS FINAL.

elskon : Jesus wants it differently. If necessary, I will ask Jesus to send angels to throw you in.

LadyAnn : WE WILL NOT GET INTO THE WATER.

elskon : A very foolish decision. That water has very good healing and cleansing properties.

LadyAnn : YOU DON'T EVEN KNOW US, WHY DO YOU THINK YOU KNOW WHAT IS BEST.

Elskon : experience

LadyAnn : WE WILL NOT GET INTO THE WATER.

LadyAnn : WE WILL HURT LadyAnn BEFORE WE ALLOW IT.

elskon : That water is from the throne of God.

LadyAnn : SHE KNOWS WHAT I CAN DO, AND WILL NOT DISOBEY ME.

I must admit, this character was beginning to irritate me. He could be an actual demon or a demonized alter. We needed a test. Fortunately, the Bible gives us a fail-safe demon checker.

elskon : So whose side are you on, anyway? Please declare for me, "Jesus Christ is come in the flesh."

LadyAnn : JESUS CHRIST HAS COME IN THE FLESH.

Oh oh, better listen closely to this character. I'd been fooled by faulty declarations in the past, but I wasn't allowing it this time. A vital doctrinal issue is at stake here. Demons can and will admit that Jesus HAS come in the flesh (past tense), but demons will not admit that Jesus IS NOW in the flesh; they will not confess His eternal deity. So a declaration using HAS is not a sure-fire way to expose an evil spirit! Unfortunately, only the KJV translates the verse correctly: "Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth Jesus Christ IS come in the flesh is of God. Every spirit that confesseth NOT that Jesus Christ IS come in the flesh is NOT of God." (1 John 4:2-3.)

elskon : not HAS come in the flesh, IS come in the flesh.

LadyAnn : JESUS CHRIST IS COME IN THE FLESH

OK, so we now know that Big Dude himself isn't a demon, but that doesn't mean he doesn't have a demon in him . . .

elskon : So you don't want LadyAnn to get better, is that it?

LadyAnn : I AM DONE WITH THESE GAMES NOW.

elskon : I am not gaming with you. <sigh> I guess I will have to ask Jesus for help.

elskon : Lord Jesus, please send Your holy warrior angels to help us in accordance with Your word. Thank you Lord, Amen.

I quote an appropriate Scripture . . . Psa 91:11-12 “For he shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways. They shall bear thee up in their hands, lest thou dash thy foot against a stone.”

But what follows is a long silence and I’m getting worried.

elskon : LadyAnn?

LadyAnn : I CANT DO THIS Elskon

LadyAnn : oops, sorry for the caps

LadyAnn : I am cut, I will be right back

elskon : Oh, I’m sorry

Remember those “physical damage” and the “we will hurt” lines that I overlooked? Well, this was the result. Not having control over their environment is one of the hazards of working with multiples on the Internet. Big Dude was a “cutter” and a “burner.” Usually the host will warn you about how unsafe her alters are, but LadyAnn didn’t so I didn’t know how dangerous Big Dude could be. I later learned how to avoid these showdowns – to get these guys on our side rather than fighting with them.¹

LadyAnn : I’m back, I am sorry..

elskon : Don't be, I guess we will have to deal with Big Dude right away.

LadyAnn : we have tried and tried to keep him in check, he just never quits or stays away.

elskon : I understand.

LadyAnn : I put my foot in the water..

elskon : OK.

LadyAnn : elskon, Big Dude is INSIDE me, something outside wont help.

Obviously some secular type has told LadyAnn that those voices were all inside her head, so now we have to debunk that generally accepted

¹ If we suspect a system of having dangerous alters, we now ask the “host” to hide all her cutting or burning instruments. One multiple we knew took all her knives, etc., and locked them in the trunk of her car. Then she hid the keys.

44 *The Shining Man*

but faulty view before we can proceed. Correcting her view takes about half an hour, but it is edited here to just a few lines . . .

elskon : He is NOT IN YOUR HEAD, LadyAnn, just in your spiritual space.

LadyAnn : they are inside me! all of them!

elskon : Why do you think that?

LadyAnn : they are me,, we are all inside me,,

elskon : That isn't true. They are inside the spiritual world and they are separate from you. You can see into that world.

LadyAnn : they aren't me?

elskon : No. You aren't like Big Dude or Rose are you? I know that's what secular psychologists say, but it isn't so.

LadyAnn : then why do I see them?

elskon : They are alters in your spiritual space. And sometimes they switch into the body like BigDude just did.

LadyAnn : they know many things that happened to me I do not know.

elskon : Of course they do, they are YOUR alters, but if they were part of you, you would know those things, too.

LadyAnn : things I had never dreamed of,, and never want to know.

elskon : I know

elskon : are you still by the waterfall?

LadyAnn : yes

elskon : I know you are too scared to jump in even though that is what you ought to do, so let's do something else.

LadyAnn : please , be careful, we already have several deep cuts from this.

elskon : I will be as careful as I can. Let's look around for Jesus. He is usually by the waterfall. He promised "I will never leave you nor forsake you, even unto the end of the world," so He is there somewhere.

LadyAnn : He is. I see Him.

elskon : Make sure He says, "Jesus Christ is come in the flesh."

I've run into false jesuses in many systems, sometimes lots of them, so I always ask whoever is out to command a spirit claiming to be Jesus to declare: "Jesus Christ is come in the flesh." The real Jesus just smiles and declares. After all, we are just doing what His word commands (1 John 4:1-3). A false jesus says it wrong or tries to bluff

his way through. False jesuses look like the real Jesus and sound like the real Jesus, but they are really darkones in disguise.

We worked for over two years with an ex-Satanist living in Hong Kong. Her alters were eventually turned away from the Lord by several false jesuses in her system. This was early on, so we didn't know what to do. Now, if false jesuses are suspected, we include "who is come in the flesh," in the declaration to protect the system from being deluded. It took a while to figure out what gave false jesuses access to a system, but it's through false doctrine – through a faulty view of who and what Jesus really is. False doctrine = False jesuses! Mercy, it's so obvious! Wonder what took me so long?

LadyAnn : yes, He did and says He is waiting for me

elskon : He has to say it exactly

LadyAnn : yes, I know,,, "Jesus Christ is come in the flesh."

elskon : Good, Now ask Him if it is His will for you to go into the water pool.

LadyAnn : He says yes, that's why He created it for us.

elskon : Exactly! Now tell Jesus about Big Dude and ask Him if He would please send warrior angels to restrain him and anyone else who might hurt the body.

elskon : show Jesus what Big Dude did to you. Show Jesus the cuts.

A minute passes, and then . . .

LadyAnn : I did

elskon : Big Dude did NOT protect you at all. He is a punisher who allowed you to be cut, not a defender.

LadyAnn : He always does that, or burns me.

LadyAnn : I'm so sorry

elskon : That's OK. Let's see if we can help him. Please tell Jesus that Big Dude is not a protector, that he hurt you and ask Jesus to send angels to restrain Him.

LadyAnn : Jesus says all I needed to do was ask

elskon : OK, let's go to the waterfall. You are now under Jesus' protection.

LadyAnn : k

LadyAnn : I am at the waterfall

elskon : OK, jump in.

elskon : Here is that bar of hyssop soap.

46 *The Shining Man*

LadyAnn : standing in it

elskon : Now as Jesus said, “wash and be clean.”

elskon : Here is a big beach towel when you are ready for it.

Now a real defender comes out . . .

LadyAnn : She is sitting in the water, with her arms wrapped around her knees, letting the water wash over her, Elskon.

Oh, how wonderful that must have felt to this troubled girl. “Wash and be clean . . . wash and be clean.” I don’t care how many times I do this, it always brings tears to my eyes. You see, Big Dude wasn’t just any old ordinary punisher, he was a slave-master who kept the rest of the system in bondage to his wishes. He was strong enough to force his way out any time he liked and demand everyone’s obedience, OR ELSE! The rest of the alters obeyed this hooligan because they knew he would hurt the body if they didn’t. So what to do? We needed to ask Jesus to free this system from his control . . .

elskon : Who is this?

LadyAnn : I am Guardian

LadyAnn : Perhaps she can just stay there for a while?

elskon : Hello Guardian. Sure, she can stay in the pool as long as she likes.

LadyAnn : She is terrified of getting out, afraid that Big Dude will be there waiting for her.

elskon : Well, Jesus has Big Dude restrained.

elskon : You could also ask Jesus to please direct His angels to put Big Dude in the pool, if it is His will to do so.

elskon : That pool just might correct Big Dude’s behavior.

LadyAnn : That may be a bit much for all of us right now, afraid he is going to do more damage.

Elskon : Well if he isn’t corrected, it’s just a matter of time before he hurts the body again.

LadyAnn : I think she is going to need stitches as it is, Elskon

elskon : Big Dude can hurt nothing as long as Jesus has him restrained. I think he has a darkone - he sure acts like one.

LadyAnn : Big Dude is actually a protector, he just knows no other way to protect.

Elskon : Well, he could have fooled me <wry smile>

LadyAnn : I know everyone, I know their memories and how they came about. He is not a dark one, we have no dark ones.

Guardian doesn't know everything but she just made an important statement: "I know everyone, I know their memories and how they came about." In my experience, only the core or part of the core is co-conscious and knows everyone and everything about them.¹

elskon : well, it is no protection to hurt the body

elskon : and you do have one darkone, Zabba.

LadyAnn : But he sees it as a way of training, hurt a little now, to prevent really big hurts later.

elskon : But he is wrong. He was preventing LadyAnn from doing something Jesus wants her to do.

LadyAnn : Zabba is much like Big Dude, but she is motivated by other things.

elskon : Well, Zabba is a darkone. She had to admit what she was when commanded to do so in Jesus' name.

LadyAnn : Do you think putting him in the water will be safe for everyone involved?

elskon : I think it is much better than leaving him loose to cut and burn again. And Jesus never does anything unsafe.

elskon : If he is a darkone he will explode, if not, the water will start to heal him.

LadyAnn : (sigh) If you think we must do this, then we will.

elskon : Well, I think it is better for you all if he is put in the pool. Putting someone in the Water of Life is always helpful.

elskon : And besides, Big Dude needs to learn that hurting the body is forbidden.

LadyAnn : Yes,,, uno momento

elskon : Here are some ankle locks to secure Big Dude in the fountain if that is what Jesus wants to do.

LadyAnn : We will allow Jesus to put them on.

elskon : Well, it's His call.

LadyAnn : OH MY!!

LadyAnn : Elskon, there are angels here!

elskon : Yes?

LadyAnn : they are holding Big Dude.

¹ In severely abused multiples, the core may be split into several parts, but that does not appear to be the case here. Co-consciousness is the ability of the system's core to be aware of the activities of other alters in the system regardless of who is "out." In my experience, only the core has this ability. Notice that Guardian was not the so-called "host," but nevertheless exhibits the abilities of the core personality. In some systems, more than one alter may be "out" at the same time. This phenomenon is also called co-consciousness.

48 The Shining Man

elskon : Jesus usually has a lot of angels with him.

LadyAnn : OOOH MY!!!!

elskon : Yes?

LadyAnn : he is in shackles, and a belly chain with his wrists restrained against his waist.

elskon : That's Jesus' call, I didn't do it.

LadyAnn : they are carrying him to the water fountain

elskon : OK

LadyAnn : He is in the water Elskon... there is smoke..

elskon : I believe it. Sounds like he has darkones.

Darkones may be loose in a system or they may be in an alter. If they are loose, other alters can see them. A darkone in an alter cannot be seen, but it can be exposed by a command to identify itself given to that alter. The Water of Life is an unfailing killer of darkones in EVERY multiple system I have known. *(this is fully explained in a later chapter)*

LadyAnn : it is like they put dry ice in the water though, I wish you could see.

elskon : Watch it and see if his skin color changes.

LadyAnn : he is screaming, cursing

elskon : cursing? I do believe he has a darkone.

LadyAnn : Elskon, he always curses, it is his way of motivating, he knows how much LadyAnn dislikes it.

A couple of minutes pass . . .

LadyAnn : the smoke is slowly clearing

elskon : OK

LadyAnn : We really need to see about getting this arm cleaned up, and if we need to get stitches.

elskon : OK, Big Dude will never do that again. In fact I will ask Jesus if I can change his name to Luke.

LadyAnn : Oh?

elskon : Yup, and if you keep him in the Water of Life for a day or so he will stop being so angry.

Unlikely as it may sound, dark or disruptive alters who are kept in the Water of Life for a while always come out changed for the better.

elskon : Feed him some hyssop tea, too.

LadyAnn : I will encourage everyone to get in the water, once he comes out. We will create his own room, since he does not have one like the others.

elskon : OK, now I will let you go. You need to get that arm fixed. This is a long way from over.

elskon : Peace in Jesus be unto you, Guardian, and to all inside.

LadyAnn : We will talk again, I'm sure.

3 EVERYONE ISN'T SO NICE

Many multiples have alters that no self-respecting young lad would bring home to mother. They can be angry, hostile, cruel, brutal, back-biters, vicious, suicidal, and even murderous. In some multiples, the inner conflicts are so terrible that one wonders how the body managed to survive to adulthood. But this is their world. If we are going to help them, we somehow have to get into their boat and help them row. And it's true, they aren't all nice, but they don't need to stay that way.

This multiple, Jerrie, was into all sorts of occult groups, Satanism included. She later became a Christian, but many of her dark alters remained servants of the enemy. That's what is causing her conflict. Alters may be male or female, regardless of body type. This body is female, but while I am talking to Jerrie, a male alter "switches out." Dark alters can use some pretty earthy language. I didn't edit it out, it's just part of what one has to deal with . . .

elskon : I am now going to see if any of your alters or spirits are actually darkones in disguise. Please listen carefully, OK?

Jerrie : okay

elskon : In the name of Jesus Christ, any evil spirits disguised as an alter, angel or some other spirit, you are commanded to identify yourself, first by your assumed name and then by your true name.

Jerrie : I AM IN COMMAND HERE AND YOU WILL DO AS I SAY UNDERSTAND

elskon : LOL, Just in case you missed it the first time. . . In the name of Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh, all evil spirits, you are commanded to remain totally silent unless commanded to speak.

Jerrie : I TOLD YOU I AM IN COMMAND NOW

Jerrie : YOU CAN TYPE THAT TILL YOU ARE BLUE IN THE FACE

elskon : I am trying not to laugh.

Jerrie : BUT YOU ALREADY FEEL MY POWER DON'T YOU. YES YOU DO.

Now if I didn't know for sure that I was talking to an alter, I would have handled this a bit differently, but this alter ignores a command given in Jesus' name to identify himself so he is positively not a demon. All demons are 100%, subject to Jesus (Eph 1:19-23).

Jerrie : FOR YOU KNOW WHO I AM

elskon : Yes I do, you are a phoney.

Jerrie : YOU KNOW THOSE WORDS MEAN NOTHING TO ME

elskon : Phil 2:10 "At the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth."

Jerrie : MERE WORDS ARE WHAT THEY ARE

elskon : You are an alter, and that "bow the knee" applies to you too, me fine feathered friend!

Jerrie : I AM YOUR WORST NIGHTMARE

Jerrie : YOU FEAR ME

Jerrie : AND I CAN SMELL YOUR FEAR FROM HERE

elskon : Jesus is the authority in both heaven and earth and He can do as He wills to you and in your system.

Jerrie : SO YOU ARE SAYING THAT HE WOULD HARM A PART OF JERRIE?

Jerrie : HARM ONE OF HER ALTERS AND SHE WILL NOT TRUST YOU EVER. GO ON I DARE YOU.

elskon : You are an alter or you would be bound to silence. So big mouth, why the caps? You're frightening no one, you're just cluttering up the screen.

Jerrie : NO, I AM NOT AN ALTER

elskon : Quiet down, me bucko, act civilized and I'll talk to you.

Jerrie : FUCK YOU

elskon : If you were an evil spirit, you would have obeyed the command to silence.

Jerrie : IF THAT IS WHAT YOU WANT TO BELIEVE SO BE IT.

elskon : You wouldn't have any choice. If you had been a demon you would have been silenced.

Jerrie : COME ON HUMAN YOU ARE SMARTER THAN THAT

elskon : I have dealt with hundreds of real demons and every one has obeyed . . . "In the name of Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh, all evil spirits, you are commanded to remain totally silent unless commanded to speak."

52 *The Shining Man*

elskon : Since you are still talking, you are a fake, a phoney and a liar.

Jerrie : THINK WHAT YOU MAY

elskon : I don't have to think, I know it.

elskon : I'll bet you have fooled a few people, though.

Jerrie : YES, BACK WHEN WE WERE IN THE CULT, JERRIE USED ME MANY TIMES TO INFILTRATE CHURCHES.

Bingo! And this was only one alter in one system. I know of many alters in other systems who were programmed in the same way. They would go into churches to introduce false doctrine or unbelief. Some believers catch on, so the alter starts acting bizarre. Now the good folks in that church think they are dealing with a badly demonized member of their congregation. People gather around (including the clergyman) to cast out the supposed evil spirits, but nothing happens. Everyone then wonders why the name of Jesus doesn't work anymore. They wonder if some sort of super evil spirit, maybe even the devil himself, has found a way to ignore the authority of Jesus. Why doesn't this "demon" do as commanded?

Well, if it's an alter, it isn't a demon, and alters can't be cast out! Some alters do have demons, but demons within alters have to be cast out of THAT alter. I have never seen a "scattergun" command that worked on an alter if it was only aimed in the general direction of a multiple's system. You have to deal with each alter individually.

elskon : Well, you are just a phoney. Why not get real? You are a person too, though you're not acting much like one.

elskon : and stop those stupid caps.

Jerrie : how did you know I was an alter and not a demon?

Gotcha! Leading this alter to Jesus and helping with his pain takes about 45 minutes. It has been edited here to two pages . . .

elskon : I told you. If you had been a demon you would have obeyed the command to remain silent. . . .

elskon : demons are subject to Jesus, you know.

Jerrie : shit

elskon : But I have a question, since they are subject to Jesus, why are you on the losing side?

elskon : I think you are smarter than that.

Jerrie : I was made to infiltrate - that has always been my job

elskon : Want a better job?

Jerrie : the group that Jerrie was in made me.

elskon : They didn't make you, they only programmed you. Only God can make an alter. And Jerrie is no longer in that group. She belongs to Jesus now.

Jerrie : you mean you can get me free from this job?

elskon : You bet.

Jerrie : ok

elskon : You sound like you would make a great warrior or defender.

Jerrie : what is that?

elskon : Well, you would help defend Jerrie, Annie and the rest. And you would also be on the winning side.

Jerrie : do I get to do damage to those that made me?

elskon : Sure, and you could be a winner.

Jerrie : okay what do I need to do.

elskon : Well, for one thing we need Jesus' approval.

Jerrie : ok

elskon : Ask Jesus to come into your heart. That will put you in His service.

Jerrie : how do I ask Jesus to come? any special words?

elskon : Just say, "Dear Lord Jesus who is come in the flesh, please come into my heart."

Jerrie : k

Jerrie : done

elskon : Now look at how you feel

Jerrie : better - hey, a whole lot better.

elskon : great, now do you have any pain?

Jerrie : yes

elskon : OK, now that you belong to Jesus, you can hand all the pain up to Him. Take it out a bit at a time. If you don't try to take it all out at once it won't hurt you so much.

The pain and bad memories can sometimes be so horrific that it almost kills an alter to deal with them (particularly if it's a child alter). Taking the memories and pain out a bit at a time, without looking at them, solves the problem. Radical as it may sound, it isn't necessary for an alter to live through those painful "mems" again or deal with them individually. He can simply take whatever is hurting him out of his heart and hand it up to the Lord.

54 The Shining Man

Jerrie : ok

Jerrie : done

elskon : ok, do you have any bad memories?

Jerrie : yes I do but this body is falling asleep here

Jerrie : can you help me wake it up?

elskon : OK, wait one . . .

elskon : in the name of Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh, all evil spirits you are commanded to stop making the body feel sleepy or tired.

I also quote an appropriate Scripture: Eph 5:14 "Wherefore he saith, Awake thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light."

elskon : OK, now do the same thing with the memories you did with the pain. Jesus will put them in the memory box where they won't hurt anyone.

Jerrie : okay

Jerrie : done

elskon : Now I 'll bet you feel a lot better <smile>

Jerrie : yes I do

Jerrie : sorry about my words before.

Notice the complete change of heart. When other alters have this same heart attitude, merges take place easily.

elskon : Oh, that is OK. I already forgot about them. We are on the same side now.

elskon : OK, do you have a name?

Jerrie : no I dont

elskon : Are you male or female?

Jerrie : male

elskon : Got a favorite?

Jerrie : Ricardo

elskon : OK, you are now Ricardo. Hi Ricardo. <smile>

Jerrie : hello

elskon : Now where are you, do you know?

Jerrie : no I don't

elskon : is it dark there?

Jerrie : yes

elskon : OK, I am going to arm you first, then send you some light. (*arming is explained in the next chapter*)

Jerrie : thank you

elskon : I wanted you to be armed before I sent you light so you can defend yourself in case there are darkones around.

Jerrie : okay

elskon : OK, Now I am going to ask God to send you light.

elskon : Gen 1:3 "And God said, Let there be light: and there was light."

elskon : OK, look around, what do you see?

Jerrie : It looks like some kind of forest

Jerrie : lots of trees

elskon : Oh ok, so you are in a forest. Can you see where the light is coming from?

elskon : what direction?

Jerrie : north

elskon : OK, since that is where the light is, I suspect the fountain is there. I want you to go North to the fountain before I let you go. I want you safe.

Jerrie : thanks, I'm walking that way

Jerrie : I see a clearing in the trees and a house is over there.

elskon : Do you see a fountain and people?

Jerrie : yes, I see it and people.

elskon : OK, go over to them and introduce yourself.

Jerrie : okay

elskon : "Jesus Christ is come in the flesh" is the password.

Thirty or so seconds pass and then a defender switches out. Though she doesn't identify herself, her attitude tells me she isn't a dark alter. Dark alters never sound this friendly . . .

Jerrie : Hello Sir, I see you brought someone

elskon : yes, let me introduce you to Ricardo. He now belongs to Jesus.

Jerrie : that is great news Sir

Jerrie : does he need to go into the fountain?

elskon : yes, always get new people into the fountain. That's a given. Here is a bar of hyssop soap for him and some new clothes. Burn those old rags of his.

Jerrie : yes Sir

Jerrie : anything else Sir?

elskon : How is his skin color?

Jerrie : becoming normal the more he is using the soap and water. I see he has been armed already.

56 *The Shining Man*

elskon : Yes, I didn't know where he was, so I thought I had better give him some way to defend himself.

Jerrie : that's good Sir

elskon : Give him a cup of hyssop tea to drink. Here is a little honey and lemon. That'll take away the bitter taste.

Jerrie : yes Sir

Jerrie : wow Jerrie's body is tired

elskon : yes, I know, but I wanted to get Ricardo to safety before we quit.

Jerrie : no problem Sir

elskon : OK, go get some rest.

Jerrie : yes Sir I will - thank you Sir.

This was a well organized system that fought many battles and lost none. Unfortunately, some multiples were really beyond our help, at least beyond any help we could give them on the net. Some systems had really dangerous or unstable alters. We tried to get those multis to find help elsewhere, but many kept coming back anyway. Maybe they were beyond anyone's help . . .

elskon : Hello Nora, how may I help you?

Nora : I didn't think I would ever find your room again

elskon : Glad you did <smile>

Nora : Regarding Coralee

elskon : Yes?

Nora_ : I wanted you to know that the children went with grandparents until the father can return stateside.

elskon : Is he in the service?

Nora_ : No, he is in Singapore on some kind of business trip.

elskon : Did he know of Coralee's problem?

Nora_ : Oh yes. He divorced her because of it.

elskon : Too bad, did you know?

Nora : Yes I did.

elskon : Well, we almost caught her in time, but a dark alter named EvilOne was out. It wasn't until another alter came out that we knew they had overdosed. We had them call 911 immediately.

Nora : She had a seizure disorder and ODing on Depakote is what did the most damage.

elskon : I see.

Nora_ : I feel partly responsible because I didn't get the church to pray for her.

elskon : It wasn't a demon that did her in but a really bad alter.

Nora : It is demonic oppression that causes such.

elskon : of course. But in this case it was not a demon but a dark alter who convinced a child alter to overdose.

Nora : Yes, that's true. It is very late here. I have to get to church in the morning.

Elskon : OK

Nora : I just wanted to let you know the children were safe.

elskon : Thank you, and thank you for not disturbing the room. There are some fragile people here who could have been hurt.

Nora : Oh, I wouldn't do that. Please tell those who knew her what happened.

elskon : Sure will, bye

Sometimes it really is a life or death situation. I didn't know about EvilOne in time to stop him from influencing a child alter to OD, but incidents like that led us to start restraining dangerous alters, either by having other alters or angels do it. Then I made a mistake. At the suggestion of one multiple who was having huge problems with a cutting alter, we began "chaining" the really unsafe alters in the fountain. We restrained if any of the following conditions existed:

1. If an alter was suicidal.
2. If an alter was hurting the body.
3. If an alter was hurting other alters inside.
4. If an alter was under demonic control.

We didn't actually use chains, but ankle locks to eye-bolts in the bottom of the fountain. My error was in using the word "chain." I was unaware that some multiples had been abused with chains, so the thought of my chaining alters caused some multiples to turn against us. It sometimes seemed that the only way to escape criticism from those intent on finding fault was to do nothing.

But restraining isn't bad and it saves lives. Most defenders happily "chain" their dangerous alters (on their own and without any input from us). Restraining keeps cutters from carving up their bodies. It keeps burners from roasting themselves with candles or cigarettes. It also keeps the suicidal from killing everyone . . . so hang the criticism, you do what it takes to keep the multiple safe. Isn't protecting and helping them the purpose of the exercise?

4 THE WATER

Some multiples who came into *Lighthouse* were in full-blown denial. It's amazing how they'd absolutely swear they weren't a multiple even after they'd spoken to their own alters a dozen times. Others were just multiple wannabes – phonies who were about as multiple as a flatworm. If they hung around real multiples long enough, they could imitate a true multi pretty well, but unfortunately, they took up a lot of time that could have been better spent. They saw playing multi as some sort of interesting game. They had a mental aberration alright, but MPD wasn't it. There are several ways to identify a real multiple, no matter what they might think themselves to be:

elskon : OK, Rene, I'll tell you what, look at your watch. What time is it?

Rene : 8:30

elskon : Hey Hilda!!!!!! Please come out, I need to talk to you for a bit.

Though asking a different alter to come out is considered impolite, I do so on occasion if there is a good enough reason. Here I ask one of Rene's defenders to come out so we can do a little work together (I didn't ask Rene's permission because Rene didn't believe she was a multiple). Rene wasn't co-conscious so she didn't know about the switch. An hour later, I asked the defender to switch back in.

elskon : Hey Rene, what time is it?

Rene : 9:35

elskon : OK, haven't we been talking nonstop?

Rene : Yes, we sure have.

elskon : OK, wasn't it 8:30 just a second ago? How come it's now 9:35? <grin>

In identifying multiples, losing time is “Clue No. 1.” Some would understand and you could help them, others would stay in denial no matter what you did. I remember one nice lady who was definitely a multiple. We talked to many of her alters and knew some of them very well. This multiple even visited our home. Then she joined a church that pontifically declared MPD to be a sin. Guess what, she suddenly decided she wasn’t a multiple. I later spoke to one of her alters (actually to the core), so I knew her alters were still there, but that so-called “host” would never again accept her multiplicity.

Hearing voices is “Clue No. 2.” Those voices can be either alters or demons and you can run into both. Identifying which is which isn’t too hard. Command the demons to silence and any voices that remain are alters. Of course, you will have to contend with the silenced demons later, but at least you now know what you’re dealing with.

Few or no childhood memories is “Clue No. 3.” I met one multiple who had no memories at all before her nineteenth year. What’s interesting is she thought this was perfectly normal. She thought everyone else was like her. Most multiples we worked with had very sketchy or no memories before the age of 14 or so.

Seeing inside is “Clue No. 4,” and it’s the most important because inside is where you can do some good. Multiples stay multiples because their inner conflicts aren’t resolved. There is conflict between alters, and conflict with darkones. There is also unforgiveness and bitterness against those who abused them, all of which has to be reconciled and inside is the only place it can be done. It can’t be done with “meds” and it can’t be done by exorcism. At the risk of repeating myself, you have to get in their boat and help them row.

I chose the following transcript because this girl was so heavily medicated that I doubt she could make anything up. It took her 30 seconds or more to reply to each question, nevertheless, look at what she saw. Her spelling isn’t corrected because it’s part of her picture.

elskon : May I ask who you are?

Molly : Michelle

elskon : Hi Michelle, I’ll bet you’re a defender. That is who I usually meet first.

60 *The Shining Man*

Molly : ye

elskon : Great. I like defenders. Well, I know nothing about you. Would you mind filling me in?

Molly : whte, femle, 20, singl, one chld, liv in SC

elskon : I live in Florida <smile>

elskon : OK, educational background?

Molly : 9th grd, hight schol

elskon : What do you do?

Molly : nothng relly, Im on disbilty. lost th job we had 6 mnths ago.

elskon : OK, do you presently have a therapist?

Molly : we se nurs practiner fr conslgn and meds

elskon : OK, what meds are you on? I am only interested in the psychotropics

Molly : lithem, haldol, zyprexa

Wow, they left out chlorpromazine and a couple of others! From the eternity it took her to answer, I figured she was on some heavy meds. It's a wonder she could type at all . . .

elskon : wow, can you still see inside?

Molly : som

elskon : Those drugs can block seeing inside and even cause some alters to go away for a while. Have you been diagnosed MPD by anyone?

Molly : yea, also bi-polor, OCD (*Obsessive-Compulsive Disorder*) and somthng dont lik tlkng abot.

elskon : Well, I work differently than a therapist. I don't see MPD as a disorder, but as a spiritual condition that protects the core from the abuses suffered in childhood.

Molly : k

elskon : I try to help multiples, so you can tell me anything you want to. If something troubles you, I might need to know it sooner or later.

elskon : Are you still there Michelle?

Molly : ye

This was taking the patience of Job. I had to wait ages for each answer. This poor girl was so out of it that conversing with her was like pulling teeth. I wasn't sure I could help her at all.

elskon : Can you see inside now?

Molly : kinda

elskon : OK, is it light enough, and if so, please tell me what you see.

Molly : I see drk place and a small lght far off. One of littls are hidng becuse they relly upset.

elskon : OK, here are ice cream cones for each of the littles.

Molly : They r smilng

elskon : Now I will ask God to send light . . . Gen 1:3 "And God said, Let there be light: and there was light."

elskon : Is that better?

Molly : a littl

elskon : OK, now what do you see?

Molly : mor light and som water

elskon : What is the water, a creek, a river, what?

Molly : stream but dont know wer it goes

elskon : OK, I might, do you belong to Jesus?

Molly : yes, I have aske Jesus in my hrt

elskon : Great, has anyone armed you?

Molly : one of r litls has aske Jesus too

elskon : OK, do you have other Christian defenders?

Molly : we have othr defndrs but no all Christan

elskon : OK, I can only arm Christian defenders with the armor of God. Would you like to call them and tell me who they are so I can arm them.

Molly : k

Molly : Dora an subrin an debbi r here with me

elskon : Very well. I will arm you all now.

I now quoted Eph 6:12-18 "Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, and having on the breastplate of righteousness; And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace; Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked. And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God: Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints."

elskon : Let me know when you all have your armor on

Molly : we hav it

elskon : Do you all understand the use of these weapons?

Molly : thnk so

elskon : OK, now lets all go down by the stream.

62 *The Shining Man*

elskon : Please let me know when you are there.

Molly : ther

elskon : OK, pick two strong defenders, I want them to walk up stream. They might run into darkones, so they will need their arms. You will have to keep me posted on their progress.

Molly : k

elskon : If they get attacked, they can fight their way out, but they can also step into the stream. They will be safe there. That water is deadly to darkones. Just a few drops can kill one.

This chat actually took place several days after my conversation about the Water of Life with Grayfox (her account appears later in this chapter), so I already knew about its fearful effect on darkones.

Molly : k

elskon : Who are you going to send?

Molly : Dora an debbi

elskon : OK, please give me a running account of their progress. They must stay right by the stream. They must not get away from it, no matter what they see or hear.

Molly : they walk upstrem but not sure wich way to go

Molly : watr dvides

elskon : let me know if it gets dark where they are going

Molly : ther is yelling and they r using th water

elskon : good

elskon : is it light enough?

Molly : fathr they go th dark it gettng

elskon : Gen 1:3 "And God said, Let there be light: and there was light."

elskon : is that better?

Molly : ye

Molly : ther is dooooo

elskon : where does the stream go? they are to follow the stream

Molly : watr comng undr door

elskon : look at the water, anything special about it?

Molly : just watr an dark

elskon : OK, go back to where the waters divided and go up the other stream

Molly : k

elskon : Let me know if it gets dark again.

Molly : k

Molly : they got to wre the water dvides and follwing othr way

elskon : OK

Molly : th watr has prtty colrs

Many multiples report that they see little rainbows or colorful prisms in the Water of Life.

elskon : Ah, that is what we were looking for. Tell them to keep going.

Molly : k

Molly : they see fontan an mor water

elskon : OK, tell them to stay at the fountain.

Molly : k

elskon : Do they see anything in the middle of the fountain?

Molly : lght man walkng to them

elskon : look at his hands

Molly : k

Longer pause than usual (and that's saying something) . . .

elskon : Hello?

Molly : im her

elskon : Did they look at His hands?

Molly : they scard

elskon : scared??? I thought you sent strong defenders.

Molly : no, our littls r scard

elskon : OK, I understand

elskon : Tell the defenders to ask Him to say, "Jesus Christ is come in the flesh." He has to say it exactly.

Molly : he didnt say

elskon : If he didn't say it, have your defenders throw water on him.

Molly : k

Molly : they r an the man is gong awy

elskon : OK, have them keep at it until he is finished.

Molly : k

elskon : he was a false jesus, let me know when he is finished

Molly : he gon

elskon : OK, now ask them to look in the fountain again. What do they see?

Molly : they se the fontin, watr, lots of lght

elskon : OK, ask them to go to the light and look closely at it.

Molly : they feel saf ther

elskon : They are safe

elskon : They can get into the fountain. It is very safe.

64 *The Shining Man*

Molly : k

Molly : Dora walkd in th light

elskon : Yes, and what did she see?

Molly : she say wonderfl ther

Molly : and som shning ppl with wings

elskon : Tell her to go to the shining people and ask them to say, "Jesus Christ is come in the flesh."

Molly : k

Molly : Dora sa he sad it.

elskon : Do you know who He is?

Molly : is Jesus

Though there appears to be several shining ones, only one answered. Here is this girl, medicated to the point of insensibility and Jesus still talks to her. He doesn't turn away from her because she is drugged up, He deals with her right where she is . . .

elskon : Yes He is. Now tell Dora to bow to Him and say, "Hello Jesus, we are your servants in this system. Do you want us all to come live here at the fountain?"

Molly : k

Molly : he wans us all to com her

elskon : So Michelle, gather everyone together and all of you come to the fountain.

Molly : k

This girl was so medicated I could do little else for her, but now she is at the fountain and can see the Lord. Also notice what she saw: the stream, rainbows in the water, a fountain, lots of light, angels and Jesus, all without any prompting from me. I have heard the same story from literally dozens of other multiples. In fact, every Christian multi I have worked with has found a fountain or a waterfall. It's idiotic to conclude that they are all having some kind of identical delusion.

OK, so we found the fountain, now we need to learn what it's there for. Grayfox is a pretty together multiple and here we meet Malar, her defender. Malar went into a witchcraft chatroom yesterday to hunt for a friend. Multiples are vulnerable to attacks from evil spirits so that little expedition didn't do her any good . . .

elskon : good morning, Malar

Grayfox : Greetings, we are battle weary this morning. we fought all night.

elskon : Malar, you ought to stop talking to known witches. They can send darkones into your system or damage you. You scared the fool out of me, standing there frozen with a grimace on your face.

What happened to Malar may sound a bit farfetched, but her experience is not unique. The multiples we worked with who spent time in satanic or witchcraft chatrooms, or even in what they thought to be “deliverance” rooms, ended up in dreadful shape, full of darkones or in Grayfox’s condition. Some multis continued to frequent those rooms anyway and after a while we saw them no more.

The enemy is very deceptive and many Christian multiples were led astray by occult activity or phoney clergymen. One self-styled pastor in a “deliverance” room admitted to a multiple friend that he was actually a Wicca warlock whose goal in life was to mislead Christian multiples. Another on-line “minister” was a rapist, but the multiple he twice assaulted was so terrified her multiplicity might be discovered that she never went to the authorities.

elskon : If I hadn’t figured out how to handle it, we could have lost you, too.

Grayfox : We’re sorry, we’ll not make the mistake again. Our darkones are not gone, we have been in battle all night.

According to scripture, there are various levels of evil spirits and demons (Eph 6:12), the same appears to be true of the demons in a multiple’s inner world. Though most multiples call their evil spirits darkones, not all systems picture them in the same way. The Grayfox system sees “uglies” and “shadows” and “caulda” (a large vicious dog-like creature). Other systems lump all evil spirits together as “darkones” with an occasional “dragon” thrown in.

Grayfox : there were shadows and we never have shadows here.

elskon : Are shining ones there, too?

Grayfox : yes. they said last night they would not leave until they were assured that all darkones were gone.

Grayfox now tells me of a big spiritual battle that is going on in a different multiple we both knew . . .

66 *The Shining Man*

elskon : Sadie is fighting a serious battle against “legion” She is outside, in a dark area, with a wall of fire around her.

We read about “legion” in Mark 5. Legion was not just one evil spirit, but many (a legion was a Roman military unit that contained up to 6,000 men). Sadie eventually won her battle, but it took her a few days. Battles can be taking place inside with the multiple looking totally normal on the outside. Now back to Grayfox’s system . . .

Grayfox : the angels say we must find “StrongMan” here, and must do our best to hold our area until reinforcements arrive.

elskon : Very well. Eat manna and drink of the fountain for strength.

Grayfox : our manna is in short supply, but we will do so.

elskon : OK, ask a shining one if he can spare some manna.

Grayfox : OK

elskon : Listen, I am going to give you two things now, strength verses and a wall of fire as protection.

I again quote the appropriate scriptures: Josh 10:25 “Fear not, nor be dismayed, be strong and of good courage: for thus shall the LORD do to all your enemies against whom ye fight.”

Deu 31:6 “Be strong and of a good courage, fear not, nor be afraid of them: for the LORD thy God, he it is that doth go with thee; he will not fail thee, nor forsake thee.”

Isa 35:4 “Be strong, fear not: behold, your God will come with vengeance, even God with a recompense; he will come and save you.”

Zec 2:5 “For I, saith the LORD, will be unto her a wall of fire round about, and will be the glory in the midst of her.”

elskon : Just say those verses aloud when battle is joined

Grayfox : OK

elskon : Now here is the verse if you tire . . .

Isa 40:31 But they that wait upon the LORD shall renew their strength; they shall mount up with wings as eagles; they shall run, and not be weary; and they shall walk, and not faint.

Grayfox : we will remember it

elskon : and if you need light . . .

2 Sam 22:29 “For thou art my lamp, O LORD: and the LORD will lighten my darkness.”

Grayfox : one thing we did find humor in during battle last night against uglies and shadows. One chose to jump into the fountain rather than face our swords. It exploded as it neared the water.

Grayfox : The look on the shadow's face was priceless as it realized its mistake.

elskon : lol

Oh, was that ever an important discovery. It totally changed the way we fought darkones in future battles!

Grayfox : there was putrid flesh all over the place.

elskon : rofl *(net talk for rolling on the floor laughing)*

Grayfox : as it landed on other shadows they screamed in terror

Grayfox : we find it humorous now.

elskon : No doubt, and it sounds like you just found a new weapon against darkones . . .

elskon : THAT WATER!!!!!!

And it was right here that we learned how the Water of Life could kill darkones. We didn't know the best way to use it yet, but it was obviously deadly to them . . .

Grayfox : well I would have chosen the sword rather than the water had I been that shadow

Grayfox : it would have been far less painful

Grayfox : the screech was awful

elskon : Wow!

Grayfox : we have placed the children around the fountain and have told them to stay there for protection

Grayfox : we will arm them with buckets

elskon : I am not sure you shouldn't carry a few buckets of that water with you yourselves.

Grayfox : bucket, sword, shield, I'll have no hands for battle

elskon : maybe its just effective around the fountain. I just don't know. I have no experience using fountains as a weapon.

Up to this point, we had only been using the “whole armor of God” from Ephesians 6, the only offensive weapon in that armor being “the

sword of the Spirit, the word of God.” But it now appears that we have other options in the spiritual world.

Grayfox : well, we do not either and did not know until last night what it would do to a demon.

Grayfox : we know it is protection for the children.

elskon : I have heard of demons being driven off or carried away, but this is the first time I have heard of one being destroyed.

Grayfox : this was a shadow not a full ugly, that may have been a factor. The other demons were even fearful of his destroyed flesh.

Grayfox : they retreated.

elskon : if it had that effect on just a shadow, I suspect the effect would be even more dramatic against a full ugly.

Grayfox : we know not, only that the fountain brings us life, and they are death. that may be the reason for its effectiveness

elskon : Yes, the Water of Life has to be deadly to them because they are of death.

Grayfox : we suspect so, but we don't know for sure.

Grayfox : I just thought it very funny when I remembered it.

elskon : Well, Jesus let you see it for a reason – to show you the defensive nature of that fountain and its water.

Grayfox : maybe there is a grain of truth in the catholic belief in holy water

elskon : That is not what this fountain is at all. look at this verse . . .

Rev 21:6 “And he said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the Water of Life freely.”

elskon : It has nothing to do with catholic holy water at all.

Grayfox : We realized it is the Water of Life not the mystical catholic belief.

elskon : Now we also understand why your water is full of rainbows, it is the Water of Life.

Grayfox : lol, do you have further instruction for us?

elskon : No. Have a good day and I'll talk to you later. e-mail us if needed, and think about using that water as another weapon.

Grayfox : we will experiment as opportunity arises

elskon : Yes, it might turn the tide, so to speak. LOL

Grayfox : Have a good day

Next day, a different multiple we know tells us about the water. I am now sharing the news with Malar in Grayfox . . .

elskon : Malar?

Grayfox : yes

elskon : The water works.

Grayfox : who tested it?

elskon : Sybille, she just won a major battle with it.

Grayfox : Glory to God. I like the thought of exploding demons.

elskon : She said there were hundreds.

Grayfox : how did she use it?

elskon : Put it on them.

Grayfox : more to the point how did the warriors carry it?

elskon : I don't know. I will find out. Wait one.

I check with Sybille who is talking to me in another window . . .

elskon : Malar, they cupped water in their hands and threw it on the darkones.

elskon : Sybille says they couldn't harm us if we were wet. She had the children get wet too.

elskon : They say it was terrible - the screams - the darkness - the loud noises.

elskon : they say they have a river that has the Water of Life in it, and they were all in the water.

Grayfox : ok we will devise a plan here as to how to arm ourselves with it. we may be able to use our water flasks.

Elskon : you might see if you can find buckets or some other containers.

Grayfox : does it work away from the river as well as near?

elskon : I don't know.

Grayfox : all right, I need rest the body anyway, we are not feeling well.

elskon : OK, I have to go too.

Grayfox : Bye for now.

elskon : Bye

You think all this is just an invention of Grayfox's fertile mind? Look, she was just as surprised as I was. And we soon discovered that the Water of Life worked everywhere inside, even when the alter using it didn't know what it was! Do you grasp the significance of that statement? The effectiveness of that water was an objective truth that didn't depend on the knowledge of the user! Sort of like giving a pistol

70 *The Shining Man*

to a Kalahari pigmy; he might not know what a firearm is, but he could sure kill you with it if he pulled the trigger.

Then Virginia, a different multiple, came up with a crazy-sounding idea. Since the Water of Life destroyed darkones no matter how you got it on them, hands, buckets or canteens, how about those huge water rifles the kids play with? She thought it was worth a try, so one day Virginia “sent” a few water rifles in to her main defender.

Sometimes we have to look past what we want to believe and look at the results. The defenders saw those guns, filled them from the fountain, and used them against their darkones. Of course, the water guns themselves aren’t the weapon, the water is. Water guns were merely an efficient way of getting Water of Life on the enemy.

Almost everything we do, we learned from multiples themselves. We learned that through faith we could send all sorts of things into their spiritual world, including hyssop cuttings and ice cream cones for the little ones. Absurd, and unbelievable, huh, but it works.

Though I do so on occasion, as a general practice, one should not put ideas into a multiple’s mind or ask leading questions. Here is another (edited for brevity) meeting with the Shining Man. In this chat I was careful not to tell Boobear anything . . .

elskon : Now stay right by the stream. If you get attacked by darkones, just throw water on them.

Boobear : What are we looking for?

elskon : I’d rather you find what’s out there on your own.

Boobear : There are cages, ppl in cages, up by the woods, cages hang from trees,, I ought to let them go.

elskon : Not now, maybe later, they could be darkones in disguise and you won’t be safe away from the stream.

Cages hang near paths in quite a few systems. None of the people in them were ever normal alters. Other systems called them “Forest People.” They were usually treacherous.

Boobear : darks coming, little nervous.

elskon : No need to be. Just get in the stream and throw water on them.

Boobear : They blow up lol lol lol. eueee, they stink,

elskon : Yeah <smile> Let’s keep going.

Boobear : light ahead.

elskon : Good.

Boobear : a clearing, people standing there.

elskon : Ask them to say, "Jesus Christ is come in the flesh."

Boobear : a couple said but three ran in the woods. The people who said have wings.

elskon : OK, we'll deal with the ones who ran away later. See anything else?

Boobear : yeah, a fountain. It's real cool. Lots of light.

elskon : OK, look in the center of the fountain, what do you see?

Boobear : real bright

Boobear : Ooooo, a shiny man

elskon : OK, look at his hands.

Boobear : they're hurt, red holes.

elskon : and who might that be?

Boobear : Jesus

elskon : Ask Him how he got hurt.

Boobear : says he did it for me.

Boobear : <crying

I don't know how many dozen times I've led a frightened alter on this little trek, but it never fails to touch my heart. It's a privilege to help an alter meet the Lord of Glory . . . not just to see His love for people in general, but to see His love for that little alter, too. Eventually, the multis destroy the darkones in their systems and begin solving the conflicts they have between themselves.

Many "host" alters have been told by their therapists NOT to talk to their inside voices. They are even given meds to prevent it. In my opinion, that treatment is dead wrong! If those voices are alters, the only way the multiple's inner conflicts can be resolved is for her alters to talk to each other.

5 THE BATTLES

The mental health community may think I need shock treatment and the Church might drum me out as a heretic, no matter, there's still a spiritual world out there and alters live in it. You can doubt the reality of all this if you wish, but those struggling alters sure don't. They use those water guns to win battles they've been losing for years and many of them get better as a result. Those who still live lives of utter confusion know that I'm telling it like it is, and this book is for them.

Some multiples are really hard to help. A few who aren't too dysfunctional want to stay just like they are. They are on disability and they like the laid-back lifestyle. You have to look at it from their perspective. If they become monominds, they might have to get a job and join us in our confusing world. I remember one multiple who used to "accidentally" overdose on her meds. She wouldn't take enough to kill herself, just enough to warrant an emergency trip to the hospital, sirens blaring. Her timing was a wonder to behold, she would only OD when her disability was about to run out.¹

Just going into a deliverance, witchcraft or Satanic chatroom could hurt a multiple, nevertheless, many multis practically lived in them. Next day, they'd come to get help with their darkones. We only saw some multis when they were in crisis mode. After getting help, they would go right back to the activity that gave those darkones access to them in the first place. The following phone call is an example of an attempt at crisis management that didn't work . . .

¹ Some multiples go to great lengths to understand the effects of their meds, eventually knowing more about them than the therapists who write the prescriptions.

elskon : Hello?

Summer : You gotta help me elskon, I'm scared. I got demons all over the place, in the corners of my kitchen, my bedroom, living room, everywhere. I see them and so do my dogs and cats.

elskon : OK, Summer, Let's see what can be done. Please hold the phone away from your ear and aim it in the direction of the most demons.

A rustling sound as she complies . . .

elskon : In the name of Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh, all evil spirits within the sound of my voice, you are commanded to leave this apartment, never to return.

Sharp intake of breath . . .

Summer : WOW!!!! OH WOW!!!! THEY'RE LEAVING, THEY'RE LEAVING!!!!

elskon : Praise the Lord

Summer : Now you gotta get them out of me.

elskon : Well, it isn't wise to drive your demons out over the phone, that's not the best way to do it anyway.

Summer : OK, how?

elskon : Well, the best way is to find out what sins gave those demons access, then you need to confess and renounce those sins and command those demons to leave in Jesus' name.

Summer : NO WAY!!! You are trying to force me to become a Christian.

elskon : No I'm not, I just don't know anyone besides Jesus who has authority over those demons.

Summer : YOU ARE TRYING TO FORCE ME TO BECOME A CHRISTIAN!

elskon : No I'm not, but if those demons are driven out without getting rid of the reasons they are there, they'll just come back worse than ever. Listen to this . . .

I quote the appropriate scripture: Luke 11:24-26 "When the unclean spirit goes out of a man, it passes through waterless places seeking rest, and not finding any, it says, 'I will return to my house from which I came.' And when it comes, it finds it swept and put in order. Then it goes and takes along seven other spirits more evil than itself, and they go in and live there; and the last state of that man becomes worse than the first."

elskon : so if we cast them out without your turning to Jesus, in six months you're going to be in worse shape than you are now.

74 *The Shining Man*

Summer : YOU ARE TRYING TO FORCE ME TO BECOME A CHRISTIAN!

elskon : No I'm not, I just don't know any other way to help you.

Summer : YOU ARE TRYING TO FORCE ME TO BECOME A CHRISTIAN!

elskon : Look, I don't need to be involved at all. I'll just e-mail you a prayer of renunciation. You can say it at your leisure.¹

Summer : YOU ARE TRYING TO FORCE ME TO BECOME A CHRISTIAN!

elskon : <sigh>

Simmer was shouting so loud I was getting a headache. Nothing much was accomplished there, the final outcome being, she broadcast all over the Internet that I refused to help her. Not really unusual. Many of those in unsavory lifestyles would turn from the road to freedom and then blame *Lighthouse* for the muddy ditch they were stuck in. Multiples who were playing with the occult, witchcraft or Satanism had a lot of demons to contend with.

If the person wasn't a Christian, their inside world was desolate and foreboding, full of darkness and threatening alters. Instead of light, forests and meadows, there were rocky cliffs, deserts and dark caves full of howling creatures. We might chat a time or two, then they'd be gone. I don't know if they were beyond everyone's help, but they were certainly beyond mine.

But the multiples who found their inner fountain and the Shining Man were a different story. Soon after they found their fountain, their skies would darken and they would be under attack by hordes of darkones. You had to hurry their arming (quoting Ephesians 6:10-18) and explain the Water of Life. I've seen dozens of those battles and the Shining Man has never lost one.

The following battle took place before we knew about water guns, before we knew about false jesuses and before we knew about including "who is come in the flesh" when testing for them. This battle starts right out with a dark alter trying to frighten us away. From previous talks, we knew this woman was demonized, but taking

¹A copy of this prayer is in Appendix A.

on a darkone or two in one alter wasn't the right thing to do at this time. We had a bigger battle that needed winning . . .

Robin : HEY YOU

elskon : I am here

Robin : YES WE KNOW YOU ARE HERE.....WHAT IS YOUR PURPOSE OF BEING HERE?.....YOU HAVE NO REASON TO INTERFERE!!! LET ROBIN AND THE OTHERS ALONE!!!

Robin : YOU HAVE CAUSED US MUCH TROUBLE,

Robin : BACK OFF

Robin : BACK OFF

Robin : BACK OFF

elskon : In the name of Jesus Christ you are commanded to remain silent in Robin's mind unless commanded to speak.

elskon : Robin? Lacy?

Robin : yes?

Hummm, immediate obedience, that could be a real demon instead of a dark alter pretending to be one. And all these repeats, you know he really wants me out of here . . .

Robin : YOU WILL LOSE

Robin : YOU WILL LOSE

Robin : YOU WILL LOSE

Robin : Robin IS DOOMED

Robin : Robin IS DOOMED

Robin : Robin IS DOOMED

Robin : YOU WILL LOSE HER

Robin : YOU WILL LOSE HER

Robin : YOU WILL LOSE HER

elskon : Hummm . . . In the name of Jesus you are commanded to remain totally silent unless commanded to speak.

elskon : Robin?

Robin : yes elskon ? I am here

Immediate obedience again, maybe a dark alter, but more likely a different demon. This was not unusual in a badly demonized multiple. You would silence one and another darkone would pop out. You kept going until all were silenced, then if some negative type was still talking, you knew you had a dark and probably demonized alter.

elskon : OK, are there warrior shining ones there, the big ones?

Robin : I think so.

elskon : Say this out loud Psa 91:11-12 “For He will give His angels charge concerning you, To guard you in all your ways. They will bear you up in their hands, Lest you strike your foot against a stone.”

Robin : ok

elskon : What do you see now?

Robin : I think two more warrior shining ones are coming. That gives us four of them here.

elskon : Good

Robin : Hello? why wont you answer me?

elskon : I am here

Robin : Hello? why wont you talk to me?

I am typing like crazy, but she can't read the screen. The words were there and neither of us were off-line, but she couldn't see them. Probably demonic interference. Looks like we're already in a spiritual battle here so this is what needed to be said . . .

elskon : In the name of Jesus, all evil spirits you are commanded to stop blocking communication.¹

elskon : Can you read me now?

Robin : Yes, I see you now Elskon, where did you go?

elskon : I never went anywhere, it looks like darkones were trying to block our communication.

Robin : ok I thought you had left me

Robin : Lacy went to tell everyone about the water from the stream

elskon : Well, I've never used it in battle, but that water is worth a try. Read this out loud . . .

elskon : Rev 21:6 “I am the Alpha and the Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give to the one who thirsts from the spring of the Water of Life without cost.”

elskon : I think the Water of Life might be another weapon.

Before this battle, the only offensive weapon we knew about was the “Sword of the Spirit” from Ephesians 6.

Robin : we need to find something to put the water into... as soon as we do I will tell you what happens.

Robin : oh elskon, things picking up in here

¹ Other commands we used against darkones are listed in Appendix B.

elskon : Tell me

Robin : something makes the darks angry

Robin : The clouds coming back and the darks and the wind really strong now.

elskon : They may have monitored our conversation and fear that water. We'll see.

Robin : we need to get the children back around the fountain.

elskon : If necessary, take the water in your hands and throw it at the darks, particularly if they come close to the fountain.

Later on, we found it safer to put the "littles" in the fountain. It wasn't deep and none of them ever got lost or hurt while there.

elskon : tell all the children to throw water as well

Robin : ok

Robin : things getting really loud now and the black things coming out a lot farther now. I think cause they made it so dark in here.

elskon : Psa 119:130 "The entrance of thy words giveth light; it giveth understanding unto the simple."

Robin : oh WOW elskon, its working, the water is working!!! and the screams in here are terrible!!!!

Robin : the earth shaking now and the noise getting louder

elskon : 2 Sam 22:29 "For thou art my lamp, O LORD: and the LORD will lighten my darkness."

Robin : they really mad

Repeating a verse during battle appears to reinforce its effect against the darkones, particularly a light verse. In many chats, verses were quoted repeatedly, but that doesn't make for good reading so most of those repeats were edited out of these chats.

elskon : use more water again 2 Sam 22:29 "For thou art my lamp, O LORD: and the LORD will lighten my darkness."

Robin : things getting really hectic... things rocking bad in here and the shouts are so loud. all the children are throwing water and the defenders are now using it as well.

elskon : what is happening to the enemy?

Robin : oh man elskon, they like they freeze in fear then they just go away... like they blow up or something.

elskon : yes, when they are gone, throw lots of water down the holes they came out of.

78 *The Shining Man*

elskon : That water will reduce your injuries, for sure.

Now we know that darkones can be killed with the Water of Life, and we finally have a weapon that doesn't require hand-to-hand fighting. Prior to this, some alters were always getting injured in battle.

Robin : everyone throwing water everywhere.... and the dark sky getting black and hard to see now and the earth shakes and rocks falling from the rock formations.

Robin : the darkones are all over the grounds

elskon : 2 Sam 22:29 "For thou art my lamp, O LORD: and the LORD will lighten my darkness."

Robin : the earth is shaking all over and the darks are dying now when hit with water, but when ones dies it gets much worse in here..... I mean the darkness and the shaking

elskon : One more time: 2 Sam 22:29 "For thou art my lamp, O LORD: and the LORD will lighten my darkness."

Robin : well..... a lot of the dark things do not come back out any more, but the earth shakes and now there is more light.

Robin : all the defenders just keep throwing water every where

elskon : Kill the rest of the dark things that are still coming out.

Robin : yes they are doing that now.

Robin : OH MY GOD, terrible shaking and rocks falling everywhere, loud thunder, the whole ground is shaking, the children are scared

elskon : tell them not to fear and keep throwing water.

Robin : ok

elskon : For the children: Deu 31:6 "Be strong and of a good courage, fear not, nor be afraid of them: for the LORD thy God, he it is that doth go with thee; he will not fail thee, nor forsake thee."

Robin : elskon?

elskon : Yes?

Robin : you should see this..... the dark things have been killed I think except for the ones that stopped coming out of the dark holes.

elskon : Yes?

Robin : but it is so silent in here. its like silence after a storm..... calm

Robin : ummmm elskon, something else.... the stream that came from the fountain..... now moving on... growing.... I don't know how to explain it..... everyone is so happy

Robin : they are singing.... and shouting.... and just running all over now

Robin : elskon?

elskon : Yes?

Robin : elskon, I think there is still trouble.... its like the walls are ready to explode they seem to be growing.

elskon : yes?

Robin : and you can hear this awful groaning sound as if someone is in severe anger..... oh God..... the walls are gonna break

elskon : just stand back from them

Robin : oh lord, the dark things..... they everywhere..... dark things..... the screams are terrible.... when they die.

elskon : You must not stop . . . get water on them all!

Robin : everyone inside is throwing water on the black things.

Robin : the walls are coming down.

Robin : such thunder and crashing noise.... the screams, elskon.

Robin : and the walls are coming down exploding.. crashing down

Robin was an SRA (satanic ritual abuse) victim whose inside world had been divided into several “realms.” View those realms as individual slices in a very large pie, each slice being a separate realm. Each slice has its own alters needing help and darkones to destroy. Many cults program multiples into isolated “cells” like this, probably to maintain control of the body after alters from other realms come to the Lord. We lost one of our very best friends after a strong dark alter from a different realm came out and seized control of her system. But back to Robin . . .

Robin : Lacy has put the children in the fountain and into the water so that they are wet and if any of the dark things touch them they die from the water

elskon : let none escape

Robin : wow.... the dark clouds looked like they got sucked away you cant see them any more..... blue sky

Robin : they started in the middle and looked like they got sucked back into the four corners

elskon : OK

Robin : the darks all just exploded and burst apart... awful smell.

80 *The Shining Man*

Robin : it looks like a tornado has been through here.... actually it looks like hundreds of tornadoes been through her... damage everywhere

Robin : children crying... but shining ones come to help them now.

elskon : how many wings do they have?

Robin : Three on each side.

elskon : I think those are healing angels.

elskon : So how is everything inside now?

Robin : things are starting to quiet down and settle down.. they have gathered all children to the fountain to see if they all are here... The shining ones are with the children now and the defenders want to look around the grounds.... cause now that the wall is down the grounds are larger and they need to see if it is safe around us.

Robin : We need to care for the injured and get things organized again... this has been long and hard on everyone.. but Jesus wishes to show the defenders the new territory.

elskon : Yes, of course. Do exactly what He says.

Robin : ok we will

elskon : By the way, how did you carry the water?

Robin : most stayed close to the river and when they got close... we threw it on them. I also found out they couldn't harm us if we were all wet. That is why I had the children in the river.

Robin : But it was terrible. The screams. the darkness. the loud noise.

elskon : How did you carry water from the river to places further away

Robin : We didn't have to, the river was close.

elskon : Oh, OK.

Robin : We need to go inside now and straighten things out.

elskon : OK, girl, bye for now <smile>

Robin : Thank you Elskon,,, We love ya, bye.

When I first met her, Robin was in an abusive marriage and suicidal. She was also addicted to prescription medications. Then her abusive husband left. Over the next couple of years, Robin fought dozens of other battles against hoards of darkones. Robin began to merge after all her darkones were destroyed and her system became flooded with light. She can still see inside, but nobody's there except the Shining

Man and His angels. Robin is now a well adjusted monomind going about her daily life.

You may believe these battles to be imaginary, that they never really happen. But if they don't, please tell me how a faulty method helped Robin and several others to fully integrate. Some had been in therapy for many years, getting no better. What kind of therapy is that? The method you are reading here . . . WORKS!

Not all battles were against hoards of darkones, sometimes it's against one misguided alter. Corri is a highly respected professional woman in Illinois state government. She was also a multiple (a fact she kept hidden her whole adult life). Her grandmother, a witch of some standing, laid hands on her and assigned a spirit of witchcraft into her while she was still a baby.¹ As a result, Corri had a nightmarish dread of hands and one of her alters, Roxanne, became a witch. Roxanne had her own bedroom and her own black clothing, peaked hat and all. She also had a closet full of amulets, charms and talismans (goodies associated with witchcraft), plus an expensive crystal ball. What's more, she had no desire to change. So how do you help a Christian system that had an alter who would resist becoming a Christian and would refuse to merge with the rest?

elskon : Hello

Corri : I am having trouble getting something out of my mind.

elskon : Please tell me.

Corri : I could see Roxanne on the ledge. She was facing the Night Guard (Julian) clenching the chain in her hand....Her gaze was unflinching....

Only one defending alter, Julian, protected this system against darkones and the witch who was with them. For as long as Corri could remember, Julian had been standing in a dark valley, with the children behind him, ever facing the enemy. I don't know how many years he'd been standing there like that, but it had been a very long time.

¹ For a better understanding of ancestral assignments, see *The Bondage Breaker* by Dr. Neil T. Anderson.

82 *The Shining Man*

After light came into the system, the Shining Man came up to Julian one day. Julian bowed and said over and over again, "I'm here Lord, I'm here. . . . I'm here Lord, I'm here."

The Shining Man smiled, touched Julian and gave him wings and a flaming sword . . . then Julian began to shine. This is only one of several systems that had guardian angels who didn't look like angels and didn't know what they were at the time.

Corri : Julian yelled to Roxanne to make a choice between the light and the darkness....

Corri : She yelled back that the light was so violent... shaking the side of the mountain... she was afraid... she wanted to go to the light, but she was drawn to the darkness and to her place with her people.

Corri : Julian yelled up to her... because of the noise... he yelled because he wanted to be heard and not because he was angry or anything....

Corri : she said she was going to jump, but Julian said no because he could not save her, he could not put his arms out to catch her.... he needed all of his strength just to keep the darkones away.

Corri : He yelled ... "to come down is to die." She came to the edge and looked past Julian... Elskon, telling you this is much harder than I thought.

elskon : I'm sorry

Corri : Roxanne yelled to Julian, "I am jumping to freedom... my death is the only way you all will ever find peace...." She said she would be at the place of learning, awaiting her fate....

elskon : Yes? Go on.

Corri : there are three valleys, the valley of being where we all are and the valley of despair that leads to destruction.... and the place of learning is at the other end of the light....

Corri : I need to go to the place of learning....I don't want to. Is this for me? the learning? I don't like the lessons there.

elskon : I don't think so, I think it is for Roxanne.

Corri : Is it going to be bad?

elskon :I don't know. That learning is not for you, but I want to arm you first in invulnerable armor.

Multiple inside worlds are all a little different, but this one has some really unique features. These valleys were new to me. I don't really

know what is about to happen, but since it involves darkones and witchcraft I figured Corri ought to be armed. I now quote Ephesians 6:10-18, "the whole armor of God." I also quote a light verse, 2 Cor 4:6 "For God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ."

Corri : ok, this is scaring me, I wasn't really worried before, I was just going to go.... am I ready?

elskon : I think so, there is light now in the valley of learning. Do not get out of the light.

Corri : There is a place on top between two valleys....I will enter on the side of the light

elskon : Do not go out of the light!

Corri : I think this is going to be very important

elskon : Probably

Corri : I am on the side of the light not in the place of learning... if you had not helped me I would have gone there instead

elskon : You must stay in the light.

Corri : I can see the place of learning

Corri : This is very strange

Corri : Roxanne is there and a stand with the book that has the knife in it... and there are darkones behind her.... are they all awaiting their learning? they aren't moving... the light has moved.

elskon : Yes, the knife in the book will not win against the light. I think both may soon be gone.

Corri : Jesus' voice is talking to them and to her.

Corri : He says, "Their fate is simple..... the edge where they are crouching is falling away...."

Corri : The darkones are gone...they have entered the valley of despair that leads to destruction.... there are no darkones left.... only Roxanne.

Corri : it is time for her learning.... the book she has is the registry.... the witch book.

Corri : The page is the page with her name on it

Corri : This is not good.... not good for her

Corri : There is blood

Corri : blood is on her hands....and she is destined to go to the Valley of despair.....but Roxanne says that I can save her... all I have to do is let her touch me

84 *The Shining Man*

Corri : it is hard to stay here... she is screaming... the light is coming towards her..... she is backing away.

elskon : YOU cannot save her, only Jesus can. She has to come into the light on her own. You cannot leave the light.

Corri : He says I cannot touch her without leaving the light... I don't want to leave the light... but I don't want to see her cast over the edge either..... this is not a good thing.

elskon : It has to be her choice. She can come into the light if she wants.

Corri : She won't... the light is moving toward her but she is backing up... she will go over the edge... she won't touch it.

elskon : That is her choice, you can do nothing.

Corri : She is gone.

elskon : I am sorry, but you could do nothing. It was her choice.

Corri : This is a terrible thing, but Jesus' voice is still speaking

elskon : yes?

Corri : He says "She chose the darkness over the light, as long as she lived the book remained open and there would be more suffering from the witch. The knife is gone, the book is closed."

Corri : the blood isn't there anymore, but the book is on fire

elskon : ah

Corri : it is just burning... burning that is all... why?

elskon : Probably because Jesus wanted it out of your system – witchcraft is now finished for you all.

Roxanne was one of the stronger alters in this system, nevertheless, since she refused to turn to the light she was allowed to choose death.

Corri : Why can't these things just happen... why do I have to witness them?

elskon : Probably because Jesus wants you to have the memory of them, both as a warning and for your growth.

Corri : do other people have inside people die?

elskon : Sometimes, but not often. Nobody needs to die. It was Roxanne's choice was it not?

Corri : Yes, I don't think she meant for that to happen in the beginning... I don't know... she was so little when it all started... I can't believe she had a choice back then... but I know she had a choice tonight...

elskon : I know, and it's as Jesus says, "Some prefer darkness rather than light because their deeds are evil."

Corri : I want to leave here... I will go through the valley of being... quickly... I don't want to see anyone

elskon : Ask Jesus first.

Corri : Sorry...I wanted to run... no... Jesus wants to tell me something... but I am very upset... trying hard to hold it in.

elskon : It's always best to listen to Him

Corri : He says, "There are no more darkones anywhere inside. There is no spirit of darkness anywhere. Darkness can come in only if someone allows it. Your other people have no more desire to follow Roxanne... their involvement was not of their choosing... We still have choices to make... and if we choose to bring darkness in, our judgment will be quick."

elskon : I see

Corri : oh... I am free to go now... I am sad... but there is good too. A lot has happened tonight... something about... we couldn't be free as long as Roxanne... I can't remember... this was too much for me.

elskon : Maybe so, but I know you feel better inside with all the darkness gone.

Corri : Yes. I am better now. I will go. A quick smile.

elskon : A smile back, and bye.

I was really sorry to see that happen. I never spoke to Roxanne, but the rest of her system loved her. Nobody needs to die and she did have a choice. Deliberately turning from Jesus' light is a death sentence. There is no hope for those who do. After Roxanne was driven from Corri's system, the other alters began to merge. Corri eventually became a monomind.

6 THE SHINING MAN

Gothic231 was a Satanist, a high priestess in her South African cult chapter, a bride of Satan and a breeder who had babies so they could be sacrificed to Satan. But then she had a little boy. Now she loved that little boy and didn't want to see him sacrificed, so she ran away from the cult and went into hiding. Sometimes she frequented the Christian chatrooms on CompuServe and it was in one of those rooms that I met Gothic231. Everyone else in the room knew what she was and wanted to kick her out, but she wasn't whispering to anyone (*private chatting*) and she wasn't making any trouble, so I suggested they let her stay. Who knows, maybe she could be led to the Lord, and soon she was. But the battles inside weren't over for her.

elskon: Sounds like you're having genuine angelic warfare there, but few would believe it.

Gothic231: yeah, but it is too much to believe its all a coincidence. All the multis see these things.

elskon: How many wings do the warrior shining ones have?

Gothic231: two, and they're bigger and whiter-brighter than the healing ones.

elskon: Right with only two wings, right?

Gothic231: yeah, two on each side

elskon: right.

elskon: the healing angels have three on each side?

Gothic231: yes and they're not as white... kind of off-white.

The secularists might wish to argue about what multis are actually seeing, but I have discussed this phenomenon with too many multiples to dispute their testimony. Most multiples see shining beings of one type or another and all describe their appearance in the same way. It sounds like there are three types of shining beings:

messenger angels with one wing on each side, huge warrior angels with two wings on each side and healing angels with three wings on each side. The messenger angels are stately shining beings. The warrior angels are much larger and brilliantly shining. These warriors usually have flaming swords sheathed at their sides and pouches at the waist containing manna. The healing angels are smaller and golden in color. Angels also appear to have various ranks and specialties in each group.

For some time, Gothic231 had been seeing shining ones inside and the Shining Man with hurt hands. At first, she didn't know who He was. She wasn't the only unsaved multi seeing these things, but some were in very dark systems and the Shining Man was always covered in light. As a result, they were all really afraid of Him. Then the culties wanted Gothic231 back, by force if necessary, so she and her little boy had to flee again. She e-mailed me the following day . . .

Hi Elskon;

We had the most incredible night!! Jesus told us that the cult people would take us by force if we stayed here so we went to a motel for the night. The flashbacks, body memories etc. were so bad that nobody inside could defend us so we had about 40 warriors (angels) defending us from attacks inside. They took the littles away so that we didn't have to worry about them.

Then later, around the time of the climax of rituals, the ground suddenly started shaking inside and heavy clouds came overhead. Our memory stuff stopped suddenly. The darkness where the darkones were coming from lifted and a window appeared. Through it we could see our family, ex, friends. All the culties suddenly stopped in the middle of their celebrations, staring - gaping at us. Then a very loud voice filled the whole area and if I remember rightly said.

"These are my own children. I called them and they heard my voice and follow me. I have gathered them to me and I will in no way allow them to be snatched away."

All of us inside were just standing there, listening to this and wondering what was going on. Then we started rising up off the ground, just vertically straight up.

Then we heard: "I will protect them, nourish, strengthen and provide for them. I will raise them up as my own because

they have heard the truth and seen the light. I have made them pure and they have loved me.”

Then rain started falling, warm rain like is in the rivers and fountains and I remember turning to the window and the people started writhing in pain.

The voice said: “To those who seek to harm my children and steal their freedom, I will show no mercy Just as they have shown no mercy in these days which I have given them.”

The rain was falling and then we heard a huge noise as many darkones all exploded at once and the window closed. We were lowered back down to the ground and there was new soft grass. Jesus and healing angels came to us then and the adults and teens were healed and merged from 71 to 15.

I don't have the words to describe what it meant for us, so I'll leave it to you. I do believe it ended our old coven's celebrations for that night - which is their greatest night of the year - before its climax and before any children's lives were lost. Praise God!

Loveya . . . Gothic231

I've lost track of Gothic231, maybe she moved or changed her address. But before she went elsewhere, Gothic231 changed her chat nickname to Rhonda and talked to me one more time . . .

elskon : You know Rhonda, we met over a year ago, when you were still Gothic231. You've had some real battles inside and Jesus has done a work in you.

Rhonda : yeah everything is soooo different, huh. :)

elskon : The cult really wouldn't recognize you now, except maybe how you look outside, and I'll bet even that has changed. You have become a different person.

Rhonda : yah, I forget most of the time... when i think about it, its like wow!

elskon : I must say, I am really proud of you. <smile>

Rhonda : We would be dead now if we didn't meet you when we did.

I do miss that girl. Life isn't easy for ex-Satanists. If they don't have a good Christian support group, dark alters from hidden “realms” can seize their system or they can fall away. Because of their past, they also have a faulty picture of who and what Jesus is. As a result, they are easily led astray by false jesuses.

I remember one ex-Satanist who had dozens of false jesuses in her system. She was always asking them what to do. I was never able to convince her to command ALL spirits to declare, "Jesus Christ is come in the flesh" BEFORE taking instruction from them. The dear lady was trying, but heeding the wrong voices got her into a lot of trouble.

Sometimes a multi will stay with you all the way to full merge, sometimes they love their present lifestyle too much to do so. Many are addicted to something, promiscuous, or they have boyfriends they don't want to leave, but won't marry. Others are just too medicated to care. Sometimes the best you can do is help them find their fountain.

Lolita : I have been bad the last week very anxious and nervous. Called my doc.

elskon : yes, and what did he say?

Lolita : upped my meds an told me to rest.

Another secular therapist following his program – upping her meds rather dealing with the reasons for her anxiety. Problem is, psychotropics reduced my ability to help her.

elskon : Well it's hard to help you if you can't see inside. I work with you inside, remember?

Lolita : please try to help because I am running out of hope.

elskon : Can you see the door now or is it completely blocked?

Lolita : I see door

elskon : OK, lets go look in.

Lolita : k, its dark

elskon : I will ask God to send light . . . Gen 1:3 "And God said, Let there be light: and there was light."

Lolita : k

elskon : Now what do you see? Do you see any people?

Lolita : yes 3 men

elskon : tell me about them.

Lolita : just men. They are all wearing dark clothes.

Mercy, dark anything inside is bad news. Right away you know these men are darkones in disguise or dark alters. Jesus never wears dark clothes and neither do any of His angels.

elskon : OK, here is a water gun. It is a deadly weapon against darkones. Shoot them!

Lolita : ok they run

90 *The Shining Man*

elskon : wet them down good. If you kill them they can't come back.

Lolita : I make them all wet

elskon : good, keep doing it.

Lolita : ok they are down on the ground now

elskon : dead?

Lolita : ya

elskon : OK, look for Jesus. When you see Him, make sure He says, "Jesus Christ is come in the flesh."

Lolita : ok, let me look

Lolita : I see him

elskon : OK, ask Him to say, "Jesus Christ is come in the flesh."

Lolita : he said it. soft voice. He wants me to reach out to him, but hard to trust.

elskon : I understand. Take out your heart and give it to Him.

Ask Him to clean it up for you and to give you a new one.

Probably time to quote a scripture: Ezek 36:26 "I will give you a new heart and put a new spirit within you; and I will remove the heart of stone from your flesh and give you a heart of flesh."

Lolita : he can do that?

elskon : yes

Lolita : he want me to take his hand

elskon : Ask Him to tell you about His hands.

Lolita : ok I am so scared. he wants to be able to touch me and take away the hurt, but scared of touch.

Most multiples have been so grossly abused by their father, uncle or brother that they fear all men. Now you'll see a lot of switching, either that or a younger alter is out WITH Lolita. Two or three alters being out at the same time is not all that unusual. Note the changes in grammar almost from line to line. . .

Lolita : me scard

elskon : He will not hurt you.

Lolita : ok but its so hard

elskon : I know, but He will make you better and take away the pain.

Lolita : me try but me no can do it

elskon : OK, I'll ask Jesus to help you.

Lolita : he wants me to sit with him

Lolita : Jesus got me

elskon : OK, He will take the hurt away. Now give Him your heart and He will give you a brand new one.

Lolita : k me do it

elskon : Good, now isn't that better?

Lolita : ya

elskon : OK, now ask Jesus to show you His hands and to tell you about them.

Lolita : his hands are caring and soft

elskon : yes, but don't you see the holes in them?

Lolita : no

elskon : OK, ask him why you don't see holes in them.

Lolita : I am seeing him as whole.

elskon : Ask Him why?

Lolita : so he no scare me

elskon : Well, He is beginning to scare me.

Lolita : why he scare u

elskon : Because Jesus' hands are supposed to have holes in them.

elskon : Ask him to again say, "Jesus Christ is come in the flesh" and listen very carefully. He has to say it exactly right!

Lolita : He say just like you say.

elskon : OK, then I'll take Him at His word.

Every system I know well sees the Shining Man, some even know him as Jesus. None have seen Muhammad, the Virgin Mary, Allah, Confucius, Vishnu, Buddha, or any other so-called prophet or deity because they just aren't there! It's not impossible that some darkone might try to masquerade as one of the above, they certainly do appear as false jesuses, but a little light and a generous drenching with the Water of Life would soon turn them into a puddle of goo. The spiritual world doesn't belong to false gods or false prophets, but to the Shining Man and the angels who serve Him.

Then there's Junebug, a Native American. She knows God as the Great Spirit, so I use that term with her. She sees herself in an Indian way, walking around the wheel of life as a green mouse. What she believes isn't wicked and won't damn her to hell, despite some church claims to the contrary. Junebug just doesn't know differently. I take Paul's approach: "To those who are without law, as without law . . . that I might win those who are without law. To the weak I became

92 *The Shining Man*

weak, that I might win the weak; I have become all things to all men, that I may by all means save some." 1 Cor 9:21-22. The alter, Little Dove is out and that is who we are chatting with . . .

Junebug : I am miserable

elskon : I am sorry to hear it. What is wrong?

Junebug : I am not sure what's happened. Something went wrong and I am tormented by a million broken thoughts.

Junebug : I am in a bad place.

elskon : Bad place? Why so? Do you not have enough light?

Junebug : In my mind. There is nothing right.

elskon : Well, lets start out by sending you light . . . Psa 119:130

"The entrance of thy words giveth light; it giveth understanding unto the simple."

Junebug : Understanding would be good. I am not used to noise, but there was much noise in my head last night. I got up and took out the smooth stone...You might call it a prayer stone even though you wouldn't have such a thing...it is more for meditation. When I took it out, I thought you would think it wrong, but I wanted quiet so desperately. I felt trapped.

elskon : Oh, I am sorry to hear how you feel. Maybe we can fix that now, and this is not directed at you . . .

elskon : In the name of Jesus, all evil spirits, you are commanded to remain totally silent unless commanded to speak.

elskon : That will quiet the voices for good unless they are commanded to speak.

Junebug : Last night when you typed the Jesus messages I was drawn to them and like reading them, then I was instantly upset. But I was able to put the upset aside. It was like there was so much in there it waited until I was relaxed to come back.

elskon : Well, I wish not to upset you. However, the Shining Man you see walking in the sunbeams is Jesus, the Son of the Great Spirit and He is a truth that should be known.

Junebug : I don't want you to be upset that I used the stone. It was a desperate attempt to overcome my brokenness. There is a voice inside, but it is a quiet voice.

elskon : I am not upset, and if there is still a voice, it is NOT that of an evil one, because they have been commanded to silence. A quiet voice might be that of the Great Spirit.

Junebug : It says I made a bad choice to listen to my own way.

elskon : Well, we all do that sometimes, so the voice speaks true.

Junebug : you want to know all it says?

elskon : If you wish to tell me.

Junebug : I don't like all of it, don't understand all of it, but I will try to tell you.... I would only listen to my mind.... mind is your greatest strength but also your greatest weakness... sorry I can't type and listen too.

Junebug : voice says I can only listen in mind when I know what I am listening to is true.

elskon : Little Dove, I can tell you how to discern if that is a true voice or not. . . .

Junebug : this one?

elskon : Yes, this one . . . Command that the voice say, "Jesus Christ is come in the flesh."

Junebug : Out loud or in my mind?

elskon : Out loud to wherever the voice is. Speak to it.

Junebug : eeeeeeeeeeee

Junebug : Did I make it mad?

Junebug : Because it yelled back

Junebug : Why would the quiet voice have to shout it.

elskon : It needed not have, but if it did not say EXACTLY what you asked, then it is not a voice of truth.

Junebug : It did say that, but it was loud, not the same soft voice. It wasn't angry. It was sure.

elskon : Then it is the voice of truth

elskon : Here is the test given us to discern a true spirit from a false. It is in the Words of the Great Spirit, Himself . . .

I quote the appropriate scripture: 1 John 4:1-3 "Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world. Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God: And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world."

Junebug : So why do evil spirits bother me? All I did was talk to you.

elskon : Evil spirits wish nobody to come to a knowledge of the truth for their power is in the lie. When a person comes to a knowledge of the truth, the evil spirits lose the power to hurt and deceive.

Junebug : I don't want to stray from the subject again and get in trouble, but you know all inside people spent time looking for religion... for answers, but they were too hard to find

elskon : Well, I have no wish to teach you "religion," but to show you how the Jesus Way merges with what you already believe to be true. You have seen the Shining Man in the sunbeams. His existence cannot be denied.

Junebug : The voice has said that very same thing while you were typing it.

Junebug : The Shining Man says "you are going to deny My existence....."

Junebug : same words even

Junebug : He says to me not to you, ... "are you going to deny My existence" then I get your message saying same thing....that is hard to believe...I was listening to it and then your typing came as an echo saying same thing.

This is one of the more remarkable incidents we experienced. In my opinion, it can only be attributed to the working of the Holy Spirit. I typed my message right after her "voice" had said the same words.

Junebug : I don't understand. Great mystery.

Junebug : Why is he saying to meet him. If he is here with me how can he be there with you?

elskon : Because as the Son of the Great Spirit, He can be everywhere at once. He sometimes chooses to come in human form, and that is how you see Him.

Junebug : How did you know that I had seen Him. You never asked IF I had seen Him. You said something like, "Perhaps you have seen him in the forest, the one..." and you knew what I had seen. That has stayed with me.

Junebug : If I go to see him, do you know what will happen to me?

elskon : Yes

Junebug : And you want me to do this?

elskon : Yes, you will not be hurt at all. In fact you will be glad.

Junebug : Now?

elskon : Why not?

Junebug : I think that this is what I wanted to do last night.... I don't know if you believe that... and I have no idea what happened... I am a little afraid that I will get all mixed up again.

elskon : No, He will bring you no confusion. Only darkones bring confusion.

Junebug : Why is it that the voice says I have to go to Him, He will not come to me.. is that His Way?

elskon : It is His Way, but it is also a good way. Do not be afraid, I will go with you.¹

Junebug : Then we are in the clearing. I am sitting on the log. You may sit by me, I hope the sunbeams don't bother you. They follow me here.

elskon : They do not bother me at all. Is He here?

Junebug : He will be beside the tree, but I am a little afraid, can you help me?

elskon : Yes, I will walk with you.

Junebug : Everyone inside would come to this tree with whatever thing they found that they thought would bring them to God, but none of those things helped.

elskon : The Shining Man needs none of those things. You see, before you would bring things to God, almost as an offering. This time you are going to meet Him.

There's a long pause before Little Dove starts typing again . . .

Junebug : Okay. He is by the tree. He is a beautiful light. He was moving toward us but has stopped now.

Junebug : He is by the tree. He stopped so I stopped. The voice in my head is talking.

Junebug : The voice says I have to go there, He will not come any further. He has a shape like a person but it is covered with light so it is hard to tell...

elskon : So go meet Him. This you have to do yourself. I will walk with you as far as He permits.

Junebug : He is in the moss garden. It is a beautiful here. There are redwood trees and alders everywhere and ferns that grow

¹ Something else unbelievable: I cannot see inside; I only "see" what an alter describes to me, nevertheless, many see me inside with them. A couple of multiples who came to visit us at our home said they already knew what I looked like.

waist high. He is sitting down by the tree on a stump and I want to cry. But I never cry.

Little Dove is typing slowly now. This is obviously a very emotional experience for her, a Native American whose culture does not accept any outward display of emotion . . .

elskon : You can now

Junebug : I feel very little and he looks very big, even sitting down

elskon : Go to Him and look at His hands

Junebug : His arms are open and I have to leave you here, I will tell you all I can

elskon : Go now

Junebug : I am going, but I don't want to leave you

elskon : It is alright, I am close by. I can see you all the way.

Junebug : Okay, I am walking slow. He does have hands.

elskon : Ask Him how and why his hands were hurt.

Junebug : Talk to him?

elskon : Of course, He has already talked to you.

Junebug : ok

Junebug : They were wounded for me . . . Elskon?

elskon : Yes?

Junebug : It is the same quiet voice

Junebug : I can't stand up

Junebug : I fall down

elskon : Yes, it is the same quiet voice you have been hearing all along.

Junebug : I am sitting by Him, but not touching.

Junebug : I am on ground

elskon : Yes, but you can touch Him if you want.

Junebug : But I already hurt him

elskon : yes, but He forgave you and He loves you.

Junebug : He says he knows me

elskon : yes, He does.

Junebug : I have drawn up my knees and am resting head on knees, don't want to look, want to cry, can't cry don't know what to do.....

elskon : I can tell you

Junebug : ok

elskon : Touch Him. Take the love you have in your heart and give it to Him.

Junebug : He is beautiful, I am looking up now, I cannot take my eyes off of him... He says he loves me, now I cry.

Junebug : Don't know love, don't know touching, don't know how, don't know anything... but I will do what you say... I have very little to give him you know.

elskon : Yes, I know, but watch what happens when you give Him what you have.

Junebug : Elskon, I don't think this is what is supposed to happen....I will have to stop a minute and then write...

A couple of minutes pass . . . Some incidents might be too personal or sacred to include, but I'm no judge. In the hope that it might help someone else, I include it anyway . . .

Junebug : I am crying while I tell you this... I don't know if this is what was supposed to happen or not, but this is what happened....

Junebug : I reached out to touch him and give him my love. Then it was like I was drawn to him, like inside of the light and he was inside of me and for that moment we were one in the light
Junebug : there it was warm and beautiful and I cried out.

elskon : You have now met the Shining Man.

Junebug : but now he isn't here, now I am sitting with my head on the stump. He said he was going, but He wasn't leaving.

Junebug : That is much too confusing to me.

elskon : I know, but if you look in your heart now, you will see that His spirit is still there and He will never leave you. You are still one with Him and you always will be.

Junebug : I want to put my head on the stump and cry, but I don't really know why I am crying.

Junebug : Not ever supposed to be seen crying by anyone... but somehow it seems okay now.

elskon : You will never be the same as you were, ever again. You are a different person now. Look in your heart, and look at yourself. He has made you a whole person. You aren't a green mouse anymore.

Junebug : I am sorry it is so late. This is only a beginning for me... I will need your help a lot, I think.

elskon : Yes it is a wonderful beginning. Look at how beautiful the forest is now.

Junebug : I was worried the forest would be gone. You are right it is here and is more beautiful than ever.

98 *The Shining Man*

Junebug : I am very tired. I need to rest.

elskon : I understand, isn't it great you can sleep in a bed now.

From toddler age, Junebug was repeatedly abused by her father. As a result, she has been sleeping on the floor of a dark closet her whole adult life, probably to escape what a bed symbolized. She was only able to sleep in a bed again after she merged with a child alter who lived in a closet inside.

Junebug : O yes, I had forgotten about that :)

Junebug : Goodnight, good friend.

elskon : Bye for now.

Junebug : bye

7 CULTURAL HURDLES

Lady Miyazaki, a Yale graduate, is a very stately Japanese woman living near Chicago. Her husband is a Japanese industrialist with an office in that city. While touring the United States last year, Lady Miyazaki was assaulted and raped at an Interstate rest stop by three black men. From her cultural standpoint, this dishonored not only her, but her whole family. If this appalling incident was ever to be made public, it would hurt not only her husband's career and their marriage, but their whole standing in the Japanese community.

So she told no one, but the memory of that attack was tearing her apart and ruining her life. She began seeing flashbacks of events from her childhood she just knew couldn't have happened, and yet those horrific visions didn't go away. In fact, they grew steadily worse. She began spending her afternoons in bars, drinking heavily . . . anything to escape. Then guilt began eating at her and she became suicidal. After all, seppuku (*ritual suicide*) was still an honorable Japanese way of dealing with the unspeakable.

She heard about me from somewhere and began sending me e-mails. Not that she expected any real help, but maybe I could get her to understand what was happening to her. She told me she could see inside and that she had a Samurai "guide."

Everyone in this system had Japanese names. Those names are confusing and difficult to remember, so for the sake of the reader they have been changed to common English names, the only exceptions being her husband, Akira, and her Samurai defenders.

Hello Mr. Elskon;

I do not wish to bring shame to you or to dishonor you in any way. There used to be a beautiful garden inside... a bridge and water... and a tea room. Now there are walls and I am three stories up. I can only see darkness below. There are closed doors on this floor. The floors below don't have any doors and

there is no way to get down. I can hear sounds behind some doors and behind some doors there is quiet. I think mostly great sadness is there.

I have a guide named Hiroshi. Sometimes Hiroshi comes to help me, but he mainly discourages. He has been with me since the fire. My mother is schizophrenic. When I was six, she put me in a cardboard box and set fire to it. Hiroshi came out to help me and I lived. I get confused sometimes because there seems to be parts to me and I think I have my mother's illness. I will understand if you don't want to talk to me.

Humbly, Grace

Hummm, a Japanese woman, Ivy League or not, would be steeped in her ancient culture. Grace herself might be westernized, but her alters could be anything from Buddhist nuns to Sumo wrestlers. Fortunately, my parents had been missionaries in the Orient so I knew a bit about Japanese culture, but would it be enough? If I made a serious error in protocol, Grace's alters might lose respect for me and lock me out, ending any chance I might have of helping her.

In her various e-mails, Grace told me she had been very badly abused as a child. She can see inside and has a spirit guide, Hiroshi. I must admit, the term "spirit guide" spooked me. When someone says they have one, it usually means a demon, but Hiroshi could be a defender. Grace also says she has "parts." Maybe other alters. The only way to find out is to chat with her, and if I do, this may be another time I'll have to "be all things to all men." Lady Miyazaki's "host" alter is Grace so I'll be talking with her first.

Grace : I am trying to make you not a man, otherwise it makes me too little, too timid... and I have to look at the floor.

elskon : I will do all I can to make you comfortable, Grace san.

Grace : Right then I thought of papa san. It made me smile :) I don't smile much, but I am only unhappy inside.

Elskon : I did not read unhappiness in your e-mails, only worry.

Grace : When I was in your room I felt that the antichrist of whom you spoke was living inside of me, but I am Christian

elskon : Now you made me smile. You may have people inside, but antichrist sure isn't one of them.

If a looney idea is implanted in a multiple's mind by a parental figure, they often hold that ridiculous belief for the rest of their lives. Grace's mother had been raped by a man she thought to be Satan, so she believed the child of that union would be the antichrist. Having that drummed into her while still a child led Grace to believe she had the antichrist inside her.

Grace : I am a little scared. I have already talked more to you than I thought I could. It is almost like I can't stop. :) It is because you are kind.

Grace : Do I make an appointment?

elskon : That's way too formal. I am not eli sama¹ <smile>

Grace : I could not talk to you if you were. I would be too bashful.

Another painfully slow multiple. At first I thought she might be heavily medicated, but later found that she was only frightened and being polite to the extreme. Three months later she sounded like a hen who had just laid an egg.

elskon : We'll just work together when you have time.

Grace : that seems impossible, what do you gain?

elskon : I am not here for gain. You as a Japanese should understand. It is my obligation to my Lord.

Grace : So you do it for your honor?

elskon : No, for His. I do not wish to bring dishonor on Him. It is really He who will help you, I am just His servant.

Grace : And all you ever get in return is more people that need help? And you think you can help me?

elskon : I have seen what you have been telling me many times, though I probably couldn't help you if you weren't a Christian.

This is a spiritual problem, not a mental one. By the way, have you seen a therapist?

Grace : No, but I was thinking about it

Wow, here is someone who isn't even sure she's a multiple. She hasn't seen a minister, hasn't been to a therapist and hasn't hung around multiple or deliverance chatrooms so she doesn't see MPD in an invalid way. It's my first chance to work with a multiple whose mind has not been messed up by false 'isms or medications.

¹ Sama is the honorarium used when addressing a Japanese warlord. San is a polite informal honorarium used between peers.

102 *The Shining Man*

elskon : Well, you may not need a therapist. We can find out why you are separated from your garden and why it has become so dark inside. You are a Christian, but your alters may not be.

Grace : alters? an alter part?

elskon : yes

Grace : alter ego?

elskon : in a manner of speaking, actually different personalities.

Grace : Are you speaking of Hiroshi?

elskon : I don't know yet. There may be others, too.

Grace : you are making me nervous.

elskon : lol, please don't be, I have been here many times.

Grace : well.... I only know Hiroshi and I know of the noise behind some of the doors.

It took Grace some time to describe her inner world, but she was inside a house built like a Spanish hacienda. It had no door to the outside. She didn't even know if there was an outside. Her hacienda had three floors and she was on the top floor. This floor had 12 rooms. There was a walkway all around and a railing, but no way to get to ground level. There had been a pretty little courtyard, a flower garden, a waterfall and a pool down there, but all that had changed. Now there was only a seething mass of very dark gray clouds.

elskon : Those could be other alters, and down by the water, what is there?

Grace : down by the water are hard to tell about.

elskon : If you can you see inside now, please look down and tell me what you do see.

Grace : all I see down there is the dark cloud like thing they made that covers the bottom so I can't see. They moved so fast they made a blur and that covers the whole bottom, but it is not solid like rock.

Grace's "they" sound like spinners – dark alters or darkones who sometimes "spin" a system to keep light alters confused.

elskon : I will ask God to send light . . . Gen 1:3 "And God said, Let there be light: and there was light."

Grace : They slow and then take shape, I can not explain it.

elskon : In the name of Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh, all evil spirits you are commanded to remove all your blocks and all your illusions.

elskon : now look again.

Grace : now they are in a line next to the walls. They still have their leader, but now I can see the bottom.

elskon : OK, I am going to ask God to send something to help you . . . Here are 250 scripture grenades and a bag to carry them in. The grenades are about the size of golf balls, but lighter.

Grenades, grenades? You have to be kidding me. Not at all, it's just another time we have to set aside what we believe in the natural man and look at the results.

elskon : When darkones come close to one, it shines the brilliant light of God's Word on them, many times brighter than day. The verses in the grenades are Philippians 2:8-11. The light of those verses is deadly to darkones.

Grace : I have to kill them?

I now quote the appropriate verses Philippians 2:8-11: "And being found in fashion as a man, he (Jesus) humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross. Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name: That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father."

elskon : Now throw a few of those grenades down there and lets see what happens.

Grace : I have to kill them?

elskon : Those grenades only hurt demons. If they are demons, you don't want to keep them, do you?

Grace : He speaks.

Sounds like that demon at ground level would like to negotiate, but I never converse with demons; they only lie and deceive. Everything they say has a satanic hook in it and I don't like being fooled by demons.

elskon : Just throw the grenades.

Grace : I can't look

104 *The Shining Man*

elskon : ok, just throw them.

Grace : I drop them?

elskon : throw them all over down there, to cover the area.

Grace : ok

Grace : loud noise.. shrill, shrieky, whirring, windy!

elskon : here are ear plugs for you.

Grace : hot, like whirlwind

elskon : The word of God is unfaltering in the spiritual world.

Grace : iiiit is like a whirlwind.

elskon : let me know when the noise stops.

Grace : veeery much light, got hard to see and type.

elskon : I understand

Grace : iiiii thinkk iiit is over but I can't put it out of my mind.

Repeated lettering is an indication that the multi is either under stress or heavily medicated. Since this is happening only while we are dealing with her darkones, it's most likely stress related.

elskon : It will pass, now look down again

Grace : ok

Grace : just the robes and the big white mask. All the beings are gone.

elskon : Well, that's a good start

Grace : You mean iiiit's over, just like that?

See what I mean? Look at the results rather than our prejudices. The darkones that oppressed Grace for almost a year were destroyed in an instant by a few Bible verses in a Scripture grenade.

elskon : :) Yup, now shout this verse aloud inside . . . John 14:27 "Peace I (Jesus) leave with you, my peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid."

Grace : for a moment iiit was quiet even behind the doors. I have never known quiet inside.

elskon : Well, you are going to see a lot more quiet. Now shout this verse inside too . . .

I quote a couple of peaceful verses: Isa 61:1-2 "The spirit of the Lord GOD is upon me (Jesus); because . . . he hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives . . . to proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn."

Grace : Hiroshi would recommend against setting the captives free. That is going backwards. Can you hear him? "I was a long time putting everyone away and now you are wishing to set them free." That is what he says

elskon : Well, we can keep them locked up for a while, tell him.

Sometimes you quote a verse and get an unexpected response. Hiroshi really doesn't want to let those alters out.

Grace : ok, that is good. he is quiet now.

elskon : Here is a large pitcher of the Water of Life and lots of glasses,

Grace : lots of glasses?

elskon : give a glass to Hiroshi and tell him to give a glass to everyone he has put away.

elskon : Jesus will keep the pitcher full, so you won't run out.

Grace : ok

And now we meet Grace's Samurai "guide", Hiroshi. Rather prickly, as most defenders are, but basically a pretty neat guy. New alters rarely change screen-names when they come out, so the screen-name remains "Grace," regardless of who we are talking to.

Grace : WHO ARE YOU TO TELL ME WHAT TO DO?

elskon : I am a servant of Jesus

Grace : I HAVE NO DESIRE TO SET THE CAPTIVES FREE

elskon : Jesus came to set the captives free and He is in authority.

Grace : AND WHO IS IT THAT YOU THINK I AM?

elskon : Grace's defender, but Jesus is still the authority.

Grace : THESE THAT ARE AWAY ARE NOT WORTHY TO LIVE.

elskon : Jesus gave them life and only He has the authority to take it away.

Grace : THEY ARE ALIVE

elskon : Yes, so they are. Are you Hiroshi?

Grace : HOW IS IT THAT YOU KNOW THIS?

Like it took rocket science to figure that out . . .

elskon : Well, Hiroshi, I am glad to meet you

Grace : I AM NOT KNOWN.

elskon : You are to Jesus, and now to me.

Grace : YOU ARE NOT JESUS

elskon : True enough <grin>

Grace YOU ARE NOT GOING TO FIGHT?

elskon : Why should I?

Grace : ARE YOU NOT AFRAID OF ME?

elskon : of course not, lol

Grace : I AM BIG AND STRONG

elskon : I believe it, but Jesus is stronger

Grace : ?

elskon : what do you question?

Grace : I QUESTION WHAT WOULD MAKE YOU SO BOLD AS TO ENTER HERE.

What a break, it looks like I'm the first person to have gone inside this system which means that Hiroshi hasn't had to deal with threats from the outside. All of his problems have been internal so he won't be as aggressive as others I have dealt with.

elskon : I am a servant of Jesus, and "I can do all things through Christ who strengthens me."

Grace : SHE IS AT A PLACE WHERE DECISIONS ARE IMPORTANT AND SHE NEEDS ME.

elskon : so? I am not asking you to leave.

Grace : WHO ARE YOU TO ENTER?

elskon : Hey, Hiroshi, stop it with the caps, it doesn't frighten me and it just makes you look like a buffoon. I told you who I am and why I am here.

Grace : A BUFFOON?

elskon : yeah, very foolish

Grace : YOU ARE NOT GOING AWAY?

elskon : No I'm not, here is a glass of the Water of Life for you. Please have a drink with me.

Grace : PLEASE? YOU USE PLEASE?

elskon : why not, I could be your friend, if you let me.

Grace : I HAVE NO FRIENDS

elskon : well, you are about to have one if you'll have a glass with me.

Grace : I PREFER SAKI

elskon : lol, so do I on occasion, but this "making friends" occasion calls for the Water of Life. Believe it or not, you will like it better than Saki.

Grace : SOMETHING IN YOU MAKES ME NOT WISH TO BE RUDE, BUT WATER?

elskon : This is the Water of Life. You have never tasted anything like it.

elskon : I am known in some quarters as eli sama, but to you it's eli san. (bowing)

Grace : Ah (a difficult bow in return). You have such a title?

Hiroshi isn't happy about my being here so I try the authoritarian approach. I bow, which is the courteous thing to do. To avoid being rude, Hiroshi bows in return, but reluctantly. I have to be careful this doesn't turn into a battle of wills. If it does, I will lose and the system will be lost to me forever. Some defenders are as belligerent as a bulldog finding a tomcat in his backyard, but you need to keep your cool no matter. Fortunately, Hiroshi has an open heart.

elskon : I am a servant of God and His Son Jesus and I am an elder in the church. But I am not here to awe you with titles, I am here to be your friend.

Grace : I don't have friends. Is there anything in this water that can take away my power and make me weak?

elskon : No, in fact it will strengthen you.

Grace : you are not trying to trick me?

elskon : I am a man of honor. I have no reason to trick you.

Grace : I will put my finger in it.

elskon : OK.

Grace : is it a test?

In a way it's a test, though that wasn't my original intent. If Hiroshi can drink the Water of Life and survive, you know he isn't a darkone. That water has strengthened many an alter and brought them to the light, so his drinking is a win-win for everyone.

elskon : no, it's a gift.

Grace : a gift, ah, cannot refuse a gift.

Grace : ok, since you will not go away (drinking)

Grace : It is cool but inside is warm.

elskon : just like Saki, but better. Now I want to arm you so you will be able to defend better.

Since Hiroshi could drink he is obviously a "light" defender on Jesus' side so I decide to arm him. I quote Ephesians 6:10-18, the whole armor of God. Then I ask him to put the armor on, which he does.

Grace : you are going to help me fight?

elskon : of course, I am also a warrior (in a manner of speaking).

Grace : and how is it that you know I defend? I did not say that.

elskon : I knew what you were the first time you spoke. I know many defenders and all are my friends.

Grace : I failed in defending against you... you got in.

elskon : Well, you didn't need to defend against me, I am on your side, not against you.

Grace : I have shamed the system, I have been weak.

elskon : You have not been weak, and you are not permitted to seppuku.¹ Jesus just kept us at peace with each other.

Grace : but what you wish is impossible, you want me to open all the doors?

elskon : Don't open the doors yet, only when Jesus tells us to.

Grace : oh, then perhaps it is possible.

elskon : He is our Diamo²

Grace : I thought you wished to just open the doors and let everyone out and that would be chaos.

I now know Hiroshi has some bad news alters locked away and I don't want them running around loose any more than he does.

elskon : No, but eventually Jesus will heal everyone who is behind the doors, then it will be safe to let them out.

Grace : and how is it you know some Japanese?

elskon : I was raised in the Orient, though I am a round-eye. I also belong to Jesus full time. <smile>

Grace : I have never had a friend before.

Over the next three months, Hiroshi and I became really good friends, but after Lady Miyazaki was completely merged, I saw Hiroshi no more. I will miss him, we had some great times together.

Grace : may I confess something to you? It is a dishonor, but I am very tired.

elskon : It is no dishonor to tell things to a friend.

Grace : feelings are not for sharing and weakness even less.

elskon : I know it is not Bushido,³ but a friend will listen.

Grace : you are an interesting man and I think you are honorable, either honorable or the biggest fool of all time.

¹ Japanese for ritual suicide.

² A Diamo is a high ranking Japanese warlord, usually the head of a clan.

³ Bushido is the Japanese warrior's code of obligation and ethics.

elskon : (bowing)

Grace : you appear to be wise so you cannot be a fool.

elskon : Many would say otherwise <grin>, but I am 76, and not too many fools get to be this old.

Grace : Ah, a sense of humor too, good.

Grace : Will you return?

elskon : of course

Grace : and I will have a friend? You will help to defend the system?

elskon : yes

Grace : Well, we have a problem

elskon : yes?

Grace : the body has to go somewhere. I bow to you as I leave, but Grace must speak to you.

elskon : ok, I return bow.

Grace : backing away

Grace comes out too quickly. I forgot to tell her to switch slowly so I know she has a switching headache.

Grace : Elskon are you still there?

elskon : Yes of course, and much has been accomplished.

Grace : And I can see over the rail at the rubble below, so this is not beyond hope. I do feel well and calmer and not so evil :)

elskon : Most, if not all of the evil is gone. Some may be behind the closed doors, but we don't know yet.

Grace : I am tired and I don't tire easily. I have done nothing.

elskon : Spiritual battle can be exhausting. I'm sorry. (bowing)

Grace : I must rest. Returning respect and honoring. Backing away.

elskon : Goodnight.

I began working with Grace late in 2003. Three months later she was a monomind and went back to her wonderful life. Only fragments of other multiple's experiences have been included in this book, but Grace's whole story (much abbreviated) is here to show how quickly and easily a multi can be helped. We meet again the next evening.

Grace : you work with other people right?

elskon : yes, many

Grace : and was this hard for them to understand?

elskon : it was for some, easy for others.

Grace : so you know I can walk inside, and I can talk in this place, and it is real to me.

elskon : yes, it is the spiritual world and its existence does not depend on your belief. It is real anyway.

elskon : It is real whether you believe it or not!

Grace : I did not make it up?

elskon : no, you sure didn't.

Grace : ok there are rooms everywhere, in some there is noise and others are quiet.

And now Hiroshi comes out without warning, switching way too fast, I know he'll get a headache . . . need to warn him.

Grace : Sorry, she is no warrior, may I throw these things?

elskon : sure, here are some scripture grenades for you.

Grace : can I throw them all?

elskon : you won't need over 20, save the rest for future use.

Grace : oh ok, can I yell?

elskon : sure

Grace : AAAAAAAAAYYYYYYYYYYYYAAAAAAAAAA

elskon : <grin>

Grace : oh, so sorry, I forgot. Friends do not yell at friends.

elskon : that's ok, you are excited.

Grace : Everything I did and I could do and still I could not beat them.

elskon : You can now.

Grace : (jumping up and down on both feet and screaming . . .

AAAAAAAAAAAAYYYYYYYYYYYYAAAAAAAAAA)

Grace : sorry

elskon : <grin>

elskon : Make sure you throw some where the leader was. Hit his cape and mask.

Grace : when they hit his mask it melted and made a snake hissing noise and the robe burst into flames.

Grace : seems rather strange. I am shamed that I was not strong enough to beat them on my own or even with my helpers (hangs head)

elskon : Well, you didn't have any weapons, now you do and I want to arm you further. You need not hang your head. I respect you, warrior. How many helpers do you have?

Grace : 15, I put them all away in a locked room.

elskon : Why?

Grace : for not defeating the enemy, for failing, that is why I hung my head. They could not defeat the enemy when I myself could not and then it left me alone to fight and it got worse.

Failure was totally unacceptable to this Samurai. For him it was either victory or disgrace . . .

elskon : ah well, it was not their fault, they didn't have any weapons either. Is it alright to let them out? I wish to arm them all. I also wish them to drink of the Water of Life.

Grace : To go there I would have to leave these doors unattended.

elskon : I will ask Jesus to put a wall of fire here to guard the doors, is that ok?

I quote the appropriate verse: Zec 2:5 "For I, saith the LORD, will be unto her a wall of fire round about, and will be the glory in the midst of her."

Grace : where do you get these sayings? They are strange but very powerful.

elskon : It is from the Word of God, the Bible.

elskon : Here is a large pitcher of the Water of Life and a glass for each of your defenders. Please have them all drink of it.

Grace : they will be hungry and thirsty

elskon : Here also are loaves of the Bread of Life for each, and for you, as well.

Grace : shhhhhh. I will speak to them now: I HAVE COME TO BRING YOU FOOD AND WATER THAT YOU MIGHT EAT AND DRINK AND BECOME STRONG ONCE AGAIN

Grace : I HAVE ENLISTED THE HELP OF A MIGHTY WARRIOR THAT HAS SHOWN ME A WAY TO FIGHT THE ATTACKERS.

Don't I wish. At 76, my "mighty warrior" days are long over, but this is no time to argue with Hiroshi . . .

Grace : EAT DRINK AND LISTEN AND YOU SHALL BE FREE AGAIN

Grace : I am sorry if I did not tell them the exact truth.

Grace : I AM OPENING THE DOOR STAND CLEAR.

Grace : I will try to not yell this time. They look sick and smell bad.

112 *The Shining Man*

elskon : Here are several buckets of the Water of Life, throw it in on them, it is very purifying. Then get them to drink and eat the Bread of Life. It will heal them.

Grace : ok, throwing the water... the gray is washing off. now they are scrambling for the bread. they are like maniacs.

elskon : Here are new tunics for them all.

Grace : they drink as if they have never had water before. What is the matter with them? They have not been here that long.

Grace : they have on new clothes and have satisfied themselves and have lined up around the wall and are bowing.

elskon : I return the bow

Grace : as do I

elskon : Now let's bring them out of this dungeon.

Grace : may they return to their places?

elskon : yes, but first I must arm them

Grace : do you wish for them to be on their knees before you?

elskon : That is not necessary, I am much taller than they anyway and I wish them to have honor.

Grace : but they are much fatter, I am sure.

Because they are Samurai warriors, I now address them as potential warriors in the army of God.

elskon : I am now recruiting you all into the Army of God with the rank of Samurai. Please state exactly: "Jesus Christ is come in the flesh." by stating that correctly you are giving your allegiance to Jesus. I will wait while you say it back to me.

To a Samurai this is a blood commitment, binding unto death, but I am also checking to see if any of these alters are darkones in disguise.

elskon : Tell me if they all say it clearly

Grace : All have stated clearly except Matsuo. He is not mocking, but questions your authority.

elskon : <sigh> I have no wish to kill him.

In feudal Japan, questioning authority would be met with an instant beheading so Matsuo would expect it. With all this quick switching, Grace must feel like she's been hit in the head with 10 pound sledge. I keep forgetting to warn her. Matsuo now comes out. . . .

Grace : MATSUO SPEAK

elskon : So Matsuo, we feed you and give you Water of Life and you question us?

Grace : May I ask one question?

elskon : of course

Grace : Why is it that you do not give us the honor of death that comes with defeat?

elskon : Because this system needs all of you to defend it. You may die in battle soon enough and that is even more honorable than seppuku.

Grace : and what you have done is what has changed and defeated those below? this Jesus?

elskon : Yes, He is my Diamyo, and yours too, if you will submit to His Lordship.

Grace : Very well, Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. I will serve with honor to protect the door of number seven.

elskon : I thank you Matsuo (slight bow)

Grace : great bow

Grace : (backing to place on wall with apologies)

elskon : Very well, I will arm you all.

I quote Ephesians 6:10-18 once again and ask them all to put the armor on, which they do.

elskon : You are all now fully armed and can easily defeat any enemy who dares to come near... Hiroshi?

Grace : yes?

elskon : I'll bet you have a headache

Grace : It is true, but is dishonor to complain.

elskon : Well, it is caused by changing places too fast. It will go away soon. However, if everyone takes maybe 20 seconds or so to come out, the body won't get that headache.

If "inside" is just in a multiple's brain, switching should be no more stressful than changing from one thought to another. So why do multiples get these painful switching headaches? To my knowledge, there has been no reasonable explanation for the phenomenon. Is it possible that an area in the human brain can enable man to enter the spiritual world, but God is not allowing us to use that ability until we are in our glorified bodies?

Grace : excuse?

elskon : yes?

114 *The Shining Man*

Grace : I need to ask question.

elskon : ask away.

Grace : dark ones? these are the strangers?

elskon : Same thing, darkones are what they are generally known as, or demons.

Grace : ok, TO YOUR STATIONS MEN

elskon : Here is a long ladder so the inner guards can get down to their places.

Remember, they are three floors above ground level . . .

Grace : ah, over they go and down.

elskon : Here are buckets of Water of Life for them, lower them down on this rope.

Grace : ok

Grace : they cannot drink the water down there?

elskon : I don't know yet. Have them pour some Water of Life on all the debris down there and watch. Look at the water already there, does it have little rainbows in it?

Grace : the tree is now green and grass grows, but the water pool is murky.

elskon : OK, pour a little of the Water of Life in the pool and see what happens.

Grace : there..... cloud of vapor or steam rising and the little waterfall is dripping again.

Note that I didn't tell Hiroshi he might have a waterfall. The system already had one and he saw it all on his own.

elskon : does the water have little rainbows in it?

Grace : like prisms at the bottom of the fall, but the fall is pretty small.

elskon : Prisms will do, pour water on the fall.

Grace : bubbles up and clears the moss and debris

Grace : AAAAYEEEEEE..... water falling and splashing and the big brave warriors are smiling.

elskon : Now the water is safe.

Grace : I think they were whispering AAAAYYYYYYAAAAAAA but they didnt have permission to yell.

elskon : <grin>

elskon : For this victory no permission is necessary.

Grace : but now what of me?

Elskon : You are this systems Retainer.¹ Now please tell me of the doors.

Grace : yes, all those that go in and out (*i.e., switch*) are in rooms now except Grace.

elskon : I see.

elskon : You have locked them away? Please tell me about those behind the doors.

Grace : they are unmentionable

elskon : I see.

elskon : Well, I think it would be proper to ask God to put a very small slot at the bottom of each door so we can get Water of Life and Bread of Life in to them. Is that alright with you? I wish to do nothing dishonorable.

Grace : I do not wish to dishonor you, but I don't know about this. It does not seem good,,, why is it you wish to help them?

elskon : Because God our Diamyo says, 2 Pet 3:9 "The Lord is not . . . wishing for any to perish but for all to come to repentance."

Grace : I will tell you that..... some are bad seeds.

No doubt referring to the mother's belief that her daughter had the spirit of antichrist in her.

elskon : Well, we could drill a small hole in a door. You could put the muzzle of your water rifle to it, put the rifle on spray and wet down the whole room. How does that sound to you? It will only kill darkones.

Grace : I will take you to one door. It is door one with Akimoto as keeper.... it is the raging child..... she bites and beats her head against the wall and cuts and bruises herself.

I didn't know it at the time, but Hiroshi was now testing me. He wants to see what will happen if he takes me to the worst room in the whole system with the most unmanageable and dangerous alter.

elskon : If my suggestion doesn't work we can plug the hole back up, is that ok? (drilling hole).

Grace : She is in chains but she can come close to the door but she shouldn't get out.

¹ Retainers were the Samurai in charge of the affairs of their Diamyo and of the fiefdom including the Samurai obligated to it. He was next to the Diamyo in authority.

elskon : ok the hole is drilled, put your rifle to it (on spray) and shoot a long burst.

Wetting dark or injured alters is my standard practice, but I never know what the results will be. What matters is that it always changes the alter for good.

Grace : ok..... she screams..... she is inhuman.

elskon : ok, put the rifle on single shot and shoot the water into her mouth. It will NOT hurt her, but we need to get the water into her somehow. It is the Water of Life, after all.

Grace : well her mouth is always open so it should be no problem.

elskon : right <smile>

Grace : you said it wouldn't hurt her.... she is vvooomittting she is sick

elskon : It will NOT hurt her. Keep shooting into her mouth

Grace : retching, I thought it would make her better.... she keeps heaving, she is fighting.

elskon : she is getting some into her, whether she wants to or not. How old is she?

Grace : I am sorry, you will be mad

elskon : No, I will not be mad.

Grace : she is little, about five and I chained her up.

elskon : ah, that does not anger me, but I do see that her condition is the result of much abuse.

So chaining was not done by me alone. Some defenders did it on their own when they had dangerous alters that needed to be controlled.

Grace : she is uncontrollable

elskon : So I see. You have done the right thing to restrain her.

Grace : I chained her and you are not mad?

elskon : no, you have done the best you could and you have been a good defender.

Grace : is she dead now, she is quiet..... she has never been still before.

elskon : I do not believe she is dead. The Water of Life has wonderful healing properties and it only kills darkones.

Grace : you can feed her but don't wake her up.

elskon : We can put a loaf of the Bread of Life beside her and she can eat when she wakes up, but first spray all that vomit to wash it away. Spray her as well.

Grace : I hope you cannot see her she is awful to look at.

elskon : Is she injured? I cannot see her.

Grace : her arms are raw and her head is battered... her hair is all matted with blood.

No doubt a picture of Lady Miyazaki's life when she was five . . .

elskon : oh my, I will ask Jesus to send healing angels to help her . . . Dear Lord Jesus, please send healing angels to help this injured one. Thank you Lord Jesus, Amen.

I again quote the appropriate scripture: Psa 91:11-12 "For he shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways. They shall bear thee up in their hands, lest thou dash thy foot against a stone."

Grace : I do not understand your ways, but I will not question.

elskon : the healing angels should be there soon.

Grace : they won't wake her will they? I cannot believe that I am talking to you about angels.

elskon : Here is a flagon of the Balm of Gilead.¹ Please give it to the healing angels when they arrive. I send it to them in faith.

Grace : You are going to ask me to open the door? You see, this is a slight child but it took the strength of four big warriors to restrain her.... what kind of a child is that?

Grace : Are angels people?

elskon : They are spiritual beings.

Grace : Do they have hands and heads..... look like people with wings bigger than me?

elskon : Yes, if you see them they have come to help.

Grace : he cries, how very strange. did she hurt the angel?

elskon : Ask them to say, "Jesus Christ is come in the flesh."

Grace : they say Jesus Christ is come in the flesh and one dropped tears on her cheek and smoothed it with his hand.

Grace : I am so sorry, this angel suffers with her pain.

elskon : Look at his hands, do they have holes in them at the wrists?

Grace : the crying one?

elskon : yes

Grace : yes, the holes are there. Is that the one you wanted?

elskon : It is Jesus, my Lord.

¹ Jeremiah 8:22, Another Christian multiple advised me about using it.

118 *The Shining Man*

Grace : It is HE?

elskon : It is He and I am on my face.

Grace : then I am also.

Grace : (whispering to you) why is He here?

I quote an appropriate verse: Mat 8:16-17 (NAS) "They brought to Him many . . . and He healed all who were ill in order that what was spoken through Isaiah the prophet might be fulfilled, saying, 'He himself took our infirmities, and carried away our diseases.'"

elskon : To help the child and all that are here. He loves all of you very much.

Grace : sirrrrrrr?

elskon : yes?

Grace : He has her chain in His hand. This is hard for me, does He not know how dangerous she is?

elskon : oh, He knows alright, but He is going to heal her, heal her spirit that is.

Grace : he has removed the chains but He has put something between her and the door..... there is a shield, but she sleeps.

elskon : Now ask Him what He wishes you to do.

Grace : I can talk to Him?

elskon : Yes, and He will answer.

Grace : and I call him Lord like you do.

elskon : Yes, He is your Lord, too

Grace : He says, "allow her sleep and feed her." This is strange, we can put food and water through the shield but we cannot take it back. We can only give to her, and she cannot be hurt when she throws herself at the shield. She now is dressed in silk pajamas and fine slippers.

elskon : Ah, and here also is a mattress, sheets and a pillow for her to sleep on.

Grace : I wonder if she will ever talk she only screams and shrieks and hurts. The Lord says "she sleeps the sleep of healing."

Grace : you are a very strong person.

elskon : LOL, No, I just have a very strong Lord.

Grace : I believe you knew what was behind this door.

elskon : I didn't know the details, but I knew it would be some badly abused person, probably a child.

Grace : do you know what Grace knows of this child? She knows this Devil Child, if only by the child's attacks against her.

elskon : Hummmm

Now there is something interesting. This little alter has obviously been driven insane and Grace is somehow responsible. The reason for the alter's hatred needs to be discovered and corrected.

elskon : ah, well sometime we should bring Grace here to see how Jesus is healing her.

Grace : but He is not a warrior, He is gentle.

elskon : He is the greatest warrior who ever lived, greater even than Tokogowa.¹ Jesus NEVER lost a battle. When you are as strong as He, then you can also be gentle. But you are right, unless in battle He is very gentle.

Grace : I think I understand

Grace : Grace is awake. Would you like talk to her now?

elskon : Yes, my friend. Please rest for a while, the system is safe.

Grace : thanking you and honoring you.

elskon : bowing

Grace : (returning respect and backing away)

elskon : switch slowly so you don't get a headache

Grace : how do you know I have this headache?

elskon : It isn't too bad if you switch slowly.

Now without preamble we have Grace, but this time Hiroshi switches slowly. Notice she doesn't even realize she's been gone.

elskon : look at the time

Grace : the time is//////// no way!!!! from 5:50 until 8:30 is 2 hours and forty minutes. Where was I?

elskon : <smile> You were here but don't remember it because Hiroshi was out.

Grace : you have changed the walk.

elskon : yes, and look at your defenders and your garden.

Grace : I thought they were being punished for their weakness

Grace : the water, oh I love to hear it, it is like music, and you did this?

elskon : No, Jesus did, but I was here when it happened.

Grace : and you fixed the bridge?

¹ Lord Tokogowa was the great 17th century Diamyo who defeated all of Japan's warring factions to become Shogun. Not only a great general, Tokogowa was also a master administrator who set up a superb governmental system. Through his descendants, the Tokogowa shogunate lasted almost 300 years.

elskon : Jesus did.

I have always considered myself privileged to work with multiples, to see into the spiritual world through their eyes and see the incredible power of God's word there. I also knew this ministry would end in a hurry if I started taking credit for what God was doing.

Grace : I used to sit on the bridge and dangle my feet in the water and rest my head on the handrail and listen to the water before the strangers raised the house.

elskon : you can do so again if you wish. The darkones are gone now. The tree is green again, too. Here is a long ladder, you can go down there if you wish.

Grace : I see. I am happy for now to see it from here. and there is something else changed.

elskon : yes?

Grace : the noise that was coming from that room? That banging and shrieking.

elskon : yes, she is sleeping

Grace : she?????

elskon : yes, she

Grace : I do not know what to say.

elskon : <smile> well, the important thing is . . . you are much better, and when you say your prayers tonight, please make sure to thank the Lord for helping you.

Grace : Last night was a very good night. I think I will tonight as well. It is so much quieter here by the door now. But I am sorry this takes so long.

elskon : There are no shortcuts.

Grace : well, I am grateful for the shrieking and screaming and banging to be gone. It was hurting me.

elskon : But please, there is no reason to be sorry. I am here because I want to be.

elskon : Goodnight, we can meet again tomorrow. (bowing head)

Grace : Goodnight, returning respect and backing away

8 THE LITTLES

Grace is fortunate to have a defender like Hiroshi. Many multiples are in complete chaos when I first meet them, but Hiroshi and his helpers had somehow managed to get all the troublesome alters into separate locked rooms. Even though Grace is still a multiple, her system is relatively peaceful and much of the tough work has already been done. Solving each alter's individual problem is the next step.

In this chapter, Grace meets Jesus, learns what drove that little alter crazy, and we meet another alter who has no reason to live. We start with Hiroshi out. We have become such good friends that he always wants to be out when I come on line . . .

Grace : I wanted to tell you something about the doors. They are in order.... chronological order. five is the youngest one and the oldest one is a young woman

elskon : ah, and you had no more after Grace stopped living with her mother, right?

Grace : no more after that yes, how do you know this?

elskon : Because I know what causes alters. Jesus sends them to take abuse that is beyond the person's ability to bear.

Grace : do you wish to talk to Grace, she is here now. I know you need to talk to her too and probably the little girl even. you are greatly respected here.

elskon : I am honored to be here, but switch slowly, ok?

(bowing)

Grace : I will take my leave now (returning respect and honoring)

This time they switch properly so no headache . . .

Grace : hello, Eli

elskon : Hi again Grace, I've been talking to Hiroshi.

Grace : my head is much better.

elskon : Yes, I think we solved the headache problem. When you switch people out, it is important not to push. Hiroshi was forcing his way out, but he didn't realize that he was causing a problem.

122 *The Shining Man*

elskon : Why don't you talk to him sometimes? Keep him company, so to speak.

Grace : I can't believe how different it is without that screeching and banging.

elskon : good

Grace : Am I going to be able to walk around inside again?

elskon : sure, you can do so right now if you like.

We go down to her garden and stand on her little bridge . . .

Grace : In the water, is there supposed to be circles with many colors like the light through a prism?

elskon : yup, the water is safe, those colors are how you can tell it is the Water of Life.

Grace : the waterfall has no beginning it just falls into the pool and it never gets too full. in the pool, it looks like the sun is shining up... please don't laugh at me

elskon : I won't, so look at that light, what do you see?

Grace : sorry the typing is getttttting bad

elskon : it's ok

Grace : iit iis aa something in the water, a shape, it is so bright..... they are open to me... and they are red

Grace : they are hurt

elskon : His hands?

Grace : Yes, they are hurt.... this is Jesus? here? I must bow to the ground. why is He here?

Please notice that Grace found Jesus all on her own. I didn't suggest who was there in any way.

Grace : the doors to all the rooms are no longer way up, they are on the ground.

Grace : There is an open door...

elskon : Rule No. 1. . . if Jesus opens a door, walk through it.

Grace : it is the door where all the noise was. but I don't have to stay long I just have to go there... everyone is watching me, the warriors... they are looking surprised

elskon : yes, I suspect they are.

Grace : I will just step a little inside. This is what was making all that noise?

elskon : yes

Grace : it is just a little girl sleeping... there is a barrier between us

elskon : Yes, ask Jesus before you go any further

Grace : He has a rule.. if you give her anything you cannot take it away. He wants me to see her face and then I can leave.

Grace : is Devil chiiild. NOOooo, I am leaving

Grace : the marks are gone and the blood is gone

Grace : then will she go away from here, please

And now you see either co-consciousness (i.e., more than one alter out at the same time) or some very quick switching.

Grace : she was a bad chiilld... bad bad bad... it was the cane.. the bamboo

Grace : no w ik c an't ty pe

Grace : iaerpojf

elskon : As Jesus shows you these memories, I want you to give them to Him.

Grace : she wouldn't get be better.... she was still bad.. and then more cane ... bamboo... do you know the cane?

elskon : Yes, I know and so does Jesus

Grace : mommie wicked eyes evil and the cane.... she taked my clothes and I blede, and Grace she mjake me take the canes

And there is the reason for the child's hatred. It looks like Grace did something wrong or her mother was on a rampage and Grace would push the little alter out to take Grace's caning. Grace is now having to relive what she did to that little alter . . .

Grace : NO No no, I am Grace what is wrong with me?

elskon : Nothing is wrong with you. Do you know who that little girl is?

Grace : I don't want to nooooooooooooooooo

Grace : I have headache. I waantt to go away now.

elskon : That is up to Jesus. Please give every one of those terrible memories to Him, right now.

Grace : made a mess on the floorrrr blood... can't make no mess thee blood... hurts... sticky

Grace : can't never cleann iiit up

elskon : Jesus can clean it up

Grace : never goin wake up a gain

elskon : give every one of those sad memories to Jesus, right now. Jesus will heal you if you let Him. look at Jesus now.

Still a lot of rapid switching, either that or Grace is co-conscious with that little alter . . .

Grace : ok I am here now.... keep going in and out

elskon : Hello Grace

elskon : Do you now know who that little girl is?

Grace : she looks like me.

elskon : She is an alter Jesus sent into your system when you were five to take the pain that you were unable to endure.

From the following, it also appears that while caning the little alter, the mother was also calling her "devil child."

Grace : momi say daaadi a devil devil seed mke me I am devil child

elskon : No, that is a lie, Jesus loves you. Please look at Jesus.

Grace : k, I aam loking at Jsus

Grace : I am back, but I can't seem to stay here. She steals my voice

Grace : hated u Grace u make me hurt

elskon : Little girl, look at Jesus. Jesus is here to heal you

Grace : k I can't gert out Jesus he com to me

Grace : He mke me sleepy

Grace : and he has tears aaand he cried tear on cheek annd draws line with it and I sleepy

elskon : ok, sleep well, little girl

That heart-touching session was edited for brevity, but we also learned the little girl's name: Juni. Grace is back out again . . .

Grace : I am crying

elskon : I know, hon

Grace : You knew we would go here

elskon : eventually, I just didn't know when.

Grace : I don'tttt want to remember. Eli, my mother was sick. It was hopeless.

elskon : I know, but if Jesus had not sent those alters, you would have died or gone insane.

Grace : She always believed I was conceived by the devil and that I was inherently evil.

elskon : Well, she believed a lie.

Grace : but she believed if she beat me hard enough and long enough the devil would flee. And I wasn't strong enough, do they all hate me?

elskon : I don't know any but this little girl, so I don't know if anyone else hates you, and this little girl won't hate you after it's all over.

Grace : what can I give her?

elskon : love, tears, sympathy, thankfulness for what she took for you, and thankfulness to Jesus for helping you in all this.

Grace : ok, and there are other people like this?

elskon : Yes, some estimate that 1 in 100 people are multiples.

elskon : All those memories need to be given to Jesus as soon as they come to mind. He then puts them in your memory box where they can never burden you again.

elskon : He also gives you a golden key to that box, because the memories are yours. The key is inscribed with this scripture quote: "My grace is sufficient."

Grace : I want to put my mmother in there, but she is still alive.

I think a switch has taken place. Sometimes a new alter doesn't identify herself right away, but a slight change in the way she types can give her away . . .

Grace : I am a shame to them, if you understand

elskon : ah, and who is this?

Grace : Juniper

elskon : Hello Juniper, I am glad to meet you. but please don't push out like that, it is painful to the body.

Grace : I am so sorry, I could not be quiet, begging pardon, how did you know it was not Grace? You must have special vision.

elskon : Because you sound different.

Grace : ah, I am sorry, I am with her mostly, I can see all so I am always aware.

Light bulbs go off in my head again . . . Juniper "sees all." Knowing each alter and understanding their position in the system is important. Juniper isn't what the secular therapists would call the "host," but since she "sees all" she is probably part (if not all) of the core or "birth-child." Though Grace is usually out and behaves as the "host," she does not appear to be central. Many therapists would try to force the other alters to merge with Grace, but if she isn't the core person, in my opinion, efforts like that would fail.

Grace : I am responsibility.... Juniper means responsibility
I will give you back, slowly :)

Grace : oh Eli, I think I am a mess

elskon : lol, no, you are fine and getting better all the time.

Grace : I feel better, mostly better anyway. Will I need to sleep a lot when we do these things? I am very tired.

elskon : Yes, it is tiring, so go rest, we can talk tomorrow

Grace : don't give up on me.

elskon : <smile> I won't, goodnight.

It will be some time before Juni is well enough to come out of room No. 1, and even more time before she will be able to merge, so we go on to other rooms. Hiroshi comes back out . . .

Grace : I think children sometimes need the most, but in room two is a nothing child with a name of Nip.

elskon : nobody is nothing. What do you mean?

Grace : well, you know how the little girl in room one is like the, oh we can't call her Devil Child anymore?

elskon : No, because she is changing

Grace : well she was wild and terrible and mean and vicious

elskon : Yes, I know

Grace : well see, behind this door you hear nothing..... that is cause she is like nothing.

elskon : ah, well lets drill a hole in it and see (drilling)

elskon : ok, hole drilled, now look

Grace : see I told you, she is nothing.

elskon : tell me what she looks like

Grace : she is skinny and ugly and dirty and quiet and she has not light in her eyes and she is color of the dead

Grace : I don't think she is dead but she looks dead, her eyes are dead, and she smells dead.

elskon : put the muzzle of your rifle to the hole and spray the whole room, especially the girl. That is living water and it can bring life to the dead.

Grace : she is stiff so she fell over..... she is laying on the floor still kinda curled like the sitting position.

elskon : Now set your gun on single shot shoot water into her eyes (it won't hurt her)

Grace : what!

elskon : Just do it, it won't hurt her, it is the Water of Life. The eyes are the window of the soul, and I want that living water to reach her soul.

Grace : ok

elskon : now into her mouth

Grace : she moves a little..... she moans

elskon : You cannot stay dead with the Water of Life in you.
Keep shooting water into her mouth. I am again going to ask
Jesus to send His healing angels to help her.

elskon : Dear Lord Jesus, please send healing angels to help the
injured one. Thank you Lord Jesus, Amen.

Grace : what if she turns ugly

elskon : The healing angels can handle anything.

Grace : she turned on her front... is dragging herself to the
corner and covers her eyes..... she doesn't want anyone to see
her

elskon : she will need those angels and probably Jesus, too.

Grace : there is not blood or wounds on her but her skin is like
paper..... she has crushed spirit

elskon : look at her face, who is she?

Grace : who can tell

elskon : <sigh> you know and so do I

Grace : she has not fleshiness on her body..... only skin drawn
over bones..... it is ugly... a dry skeleton

elskon : yes?

Grace : I hear something and I want to disagree. It is an inner
voice saying "take a good look" don't turn away.

Grace : but it is more like TAKE A GOOD LOOK! it hurts me to
the floor.. it hurts me sick

elskon : I suspect that's the inner voice of our Lord

There is a very long pause and I'm getting worried. The following bit
is edited for brevity; I leave a little of it to show how difficult it can be
for an alter to accomplish some things. I also leave the typos just like
they are. They show the struggle Hiroshi is having far better than
anything I could say . . .

Grace : I am here, but was a bad time. you can't leave me if I
have to do this one thing.

elskon : I will be right here. What is it you have to do?

Grace : to u -- ch her

elskon : ?

Grace : toooooooooouuu

Grace : ccank;;;t

elskon : read this . . . Isa 40:31 "But they that wait upon the
LORD shall renew their strength; they shall mount up with

wings as eagles; they shall run, and not be weary; and they shall walk, and not faint."

elskon : Here, drink this glass of the Water of Life.

Grace : k

elskon : Now we can do it together

Grace : yo would tou ch that?

elskon : yes

I'm a little slow sometimes, but finally catch on. Hiroshi is totally repelled by the thought of what he has to do . . .

Grace : why?

elskon : Because I serve Jesus and I do what He says.

Grace : you would do it by yourself?

elskon : If necessary. What is it Jesus wants us to do?

Grace : ttttthou.....c.....h it.

elskon : <sigh> I still don't understand

Grace : I must toucccch her

elskon : So? I will touch her with you

Grace : I just have to touch her a little..... on her arm but it is just a bone with a little skin

elskon : so lets do it

Grace : ahhhhhhhhh, it iisnt for me it was for her..... she smiled a little but it is hard to tell with no face, no cheeks

It is obvious this girl has been starved, for love surely, but maybe also starved physically. It's hard to tell, and if we do this right we may never know because this little waif can hand all her pain up to Jesus without telling us about it or living through it again.

elskon : Here are several loaves of the Bread of Life and a large pitcher of the Water of Life. Please feed her and give her drink.

Grace : she reached out with a finger, it doesn't even feel like finger but it is all she can do I guess.

Grace : can you do something with the bread I don't think she can eaat..... can it be put in the water or something

elskon : I will soften it in the water

elskon : here is a spoon, that will help. The bread is almost like liquid now

Grace : she kinda chokes little

elskon : yes, very slowly not too much at a time.

Grace : I guess she wants to live

elskon : I am telling her I love her. You tell her you love her, too.
That will help.

Grace : I am a warrior..... sorry, I keep forgetting you are above me.

elskon : Warrior or not, love is not impossible.

Grace : you can love this?

elskon : Yes, and so can you

Grace : have you seen anyone like this before, sick to death?

elskon : no, But I love her spirit, not what we see of her body

Grace : ok, in my head I hear we gave her something she needed.... now they will come, the caring ones.

elskon : ah, the healing angels

Grace : but she needed that first.... do you understand this?

elskon : I think so. We had to let her know we wanted her to live.

Grace : we can leave the room nnnow and I would like to

elskon : You are now a better warrior than ever. You have always known how to fight, but you have now learned compassion.

Grace : it was terrible. I put her in there. I put her there because if she stayed out it is what Grace would have become

Long silence then Grace comes out . . .

Grace : Hiroshi started to talk to me, then he had tears in his eyes and bowed his head and walked away. did I hurt him?

elskon : ah no, but he has learned compassion. It is painful, but it has also made him stronger. Please show respect to Hiroshi, he is a great defender and my friend.

Grace : The number 2 door is not locked now there is light under the door but it doesn't open.

elskon : tell me about the light

Grace : tthe light is a bright white light..... lighter than sunshine

elskon : Then Jesus is there.

Grace : I want to get away from here.. can I just go now

elskon : ok, come on out

Grace : can I say good bye. I am upset... the feeling when I come on line like everything is going to jump out of me?

elskon : yes?

Grace : well standing between those two rooms it is like the opposite..... pulling

elskon : Well, you are out now and should be ok

Grace : Yes I feel better

130 *The Shining Man*

elskon : We will have to go very slowly.

Grace : room 2 used to have noise... it was like moaning to die, but it quit.. now a baby noise.

Grace : I think I need to rest. I am a little disturbed, so I should go.. I am sleepy Eli

elskon : OK, goodnight <smile>

The little girl in room two is named Nip. She will also take a lot of time to heal, and so we end it for the night. The next time we meet we go to the third little . . .

elskon : Hello Grace. You knew Hiroshi before I came along?

Grace : we must have been twins at birth, I cannot remember his beginning.

elskon : He may be part of the birth-child.

Grace : Hiroshi has a changed appearance. I think he is feeling special or something

elskon : what do you mean?

Grace : He has a different look about him. he seems to have a confidence and an inner smile.

elskon : yes of course, he is your chief defender and my right hand man.

Grace : I am jumpy

I spend about an hour with Grace, helping her get over some of her memories, particularly the gang rape, and then . . .

elskon : Ok, would it be permissible for me to speak to Hiroshi?

Grace : yes

elskon : thank you, please switch slowly.

Grace : I am here

elskon : Greetings Hiroshi, how does it feel to be on the winning side for a change? <smile>

Grace : it feels good

elskon : Have there been any problems that we should address? the girl in room 2?

Grace : she has better color and is clean, but she isn't chained

elskon : Chain is no longer necessary. Here is pitcher of the Water of Life and a dozen loaves Bread of Life. Please feed her regularly.

Grace : are we to become babysitters? unbecoming for warriors.

elskon : lol, only for a bit, soon you will have help. If Jesus can be a babysitter for a while, so can we. It does not offend my honor.

Grace :ok

elskon : So are you ready to move on? How about door 3? What do you know about it?

Grace : it is a mystery... I tried to hold a child there. I was overpowered in the process, it is hard to explain. someone is there, I am shamed.... failed

elskon : ok, is it a man or a woman? boy or girl and how old?

Grace : I will tell you as I remember. It was a child named Per.

Grace : I tried to put her in there I opened the door and there was something in the room that said they had been waiting for me and it came out in a woosh.

Ah, a spirit of some kind, most likely a demon.

elskon : ah, is it still there?

Grace : it may be that it is in there still... and the child.... or it may be empty.

elskon : ok, then I will drill a small hole, put the muzzle of your rifle (set on spray) to the hole immediately and give a long spray all over the room.

Grace : k

elskon : But first, I will ask God to send a very bright light into the room. Gen 1:3 "And God said, Let there be light: and there was light."

Grace : there is smoke

I am now pretty sure there's a demon of some kind in that room so

I ask God to send light three more times . . .

Grace : and there is more smoke

elskon : ok, I will now drill the hole (drilling) Ok, you have a hole, shoot!

Grace : there is like smoke coming out from under the door or something.

elskon : how about now?

Grace : hissing, growling, groaning, but it stops

elskon : ok, lets look in the hole.

Grace : a brown robe and a mask and a child holding the robe.

elskon : shoot the mask and the robe.

Grace : I do not mean to disagree, but the child is holding them

elskon : shoot anyway, the water won't hurt the child.

Grace : ok melting like burning plastic, bubbling... robe burns but the house does not catch fire and the child does not burn.

elskon : now wet the child down really good.

Grace : do these children not wear any clothes, just underwear... this one had clothes.

elskon : I don't know, we shall find out later. Now put the rifle on single shot and shoot the child in the eyes, The water will not hurt her.

Grace : this always makes me so nervous even though I know it is as you say.

elskon : I know, my friend, but it must be done.

Grace : something strange. I do not like this child much at the moment

elskon : lol, why not?

Grace : when the water touches her skin where it drips down, all of a sudden there are tattoos that come through her skin and then drip down on the floor... they are black under the skin, then it drips but it is red on the floor.

Ah, satanic rituals of some kind. I have to remember that this is the spiritual world so we sometimes see real events pictured in a symbolic way. For instance, the Water of Life is a symbol of the word of God (Ephesians 5:26). In the same way, those tattoos may be symbolic of the satanic rituals in which the child was forced to participate. They may depict the very spells said over this alter by an adult.

elskon : ah, I understand, she has been given to occult rituals. Shoot a lot of water into her mouth

Grace : will more devil writing come out of her skin?

elskon : Maybe, and if so that water will kill it

Grace : ok, doing so..... lots of noise

Grace : she grabs at her skin when the tattoos come to the surface trying to pull them out, but they come out anyway and the noise is less.

elskon : yes, they will all come out, just keep at it

Grace : she is lying on the floor holding her stomach... the skin of her stomach has a big tattoo and it is an evil shape.

elskon : ah, shoot at her stomach

Grace : and it is coming out of her skin and she is yelling. does it hurt her?

elskon : keep shooting

Grace : it sounds like it is hurting her

elskon : she should be glad to get rid of it

Grace : it is pushing out and she is rolling to the side and it is dripping red on the floor.... and she is quiet

elskon : keep it wet.

Grace : YOU CANNOT HAVE HER

Grace : YOU CANNOT HAVE HER

elskon : In the name of Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh, all evil spirits, you are commanded to keep silent unless commanded to speak.

Grace : eli

elskon : yes?

Grace : its me, elskon

And this time I don't understand. I think this new voice is coming out of that little alter, but it is actually coming out of Hiroshi himself.

Grace : YOU CANNOT HAVE HER

Grace : help me

elskon : I am

Grace : YOU CANNOT HAVE HER

Grace : its me Hiroshi..... it is my mouth saying this

elskon : Ah, ok Hiroshi, here is a very large glass of the Water of Life, drink it all down.

Grace : I was shooting and all of a sudden my mouth said.... you know

Grace : I was washing the floor and some of the black got on me from her where she was lying it didn't get all wet.

elskon : ah, well here is a tubful of the Water of Life, jump in and wash yourself thoroughly, wash all over, including your hair. do a good job, duck under the water some, too.

Grace : I am better

elskon : ok wash the gun off, too

We get Hiroshi free of his problem first and then get back to Per. Now Per does have a demon, no question. She must be freed of that spirit before we can do anything else. According to Scripture, there are several levels of evil spirits and we have seen various kinds in multiples. Spirits cannot be killed in the material world, but it appears that they can be destroyed here.

elskon : now push some of the light grenades through the hole

elskon : ok, what is her name?

Grace : Per

elskon : OK, I want you to shout the following through the hole,
"In the name of Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh, all evil
spirits you are commanded to come out of Per at once."

elskon : Shoot quickly with your water gun, some of those
darkones are pretty swift and if any of them get away you will
just have to fight them again later. Kill whatever comes out.

Grace : she jerks, and I am shooting. she is like she is in electric
shock... jerking

elskon : "In the name of Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh,
all evil spirits you are commanded to come out of Per at once."

Grace : she jerks less

elskon : shoot what comes out.

elskon : "In the name of Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh,
all evil spirits you are commanded to come out of Per at once."

Grace : it is big

elskon : shoot it, the water will kill it

Grace : I cannot believe it..... like a three dimensional shadow
coming out of her mouth

elskon : kill it

Grace : I am

elskon : "In the name of Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh,
all evil spirits you are commanded to come out of Per at once."

Grace : it is getting smaller around and ends

elskon : keep at it until it is no more at all.

elskon : "In the name of Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh,
all evil spirits you are commanded to come out of Per at once."

Grace : it is not visible any more

elskon : How does the girl look?

Grace : her body is lifeless but her eyes are open

elskon : I am putting the Water of Life and the Bread of Life
beside her. Tell her to eat and drink right now.

Grace : she eats rudely, well actually I guess not rudely for
Japanese, noisily. she is showing she appreciates good bread
and water.

elskon : ok, here is a tub full of the Water of Life for her. Tell her
to get in it and wash herself clean. tell her to duck under the
water, too.

Grace : she wants to keep it in her room

elskon : she can, it is hers.

Grace : she is demanding, bad manners. I mean she is greedy more bread and water and she wants the tub, and she is suspicious that we will take it away

elskon : ok, here are fresh clothes for her after she is clean, a towel and a bar of hyssop soap to wash with. Tell her, If I had wanted to take it away, I would never have given it to her.

Grace : she holds them so tight. now she is afraid to put them down and get in the water. can you figure her out?

elskon : sure, she has been deprived of even the barest necessities and trusts no one.

Grace : she can talk. she hasn't said anything, but she has water in her eyes

elskon : tell her we love her, I know it is not warrior-like, but tell her anyway.

Grace :, like babysit a little..... grrrrr

elskon : yup <grin>

Grace : well, we better keep her in her room or this Per will try to steal the waterfall.

Right about here I noticed something important . . . In room 1 is Juni. In room 2 is Nip. In room 3 is Per! Juni-Nip-Per . . . Juniper!!!! These child alters must be MIRRORS of the core alter Juniper whom we met earlier! Mirrors are hard to explain and only a few multiples have them. They are usually hidden and are like the backside or reflection of a known alter. The ying-yang, if I may use that expression. But at least we know who these littles are destined to merge with.

Grace : they are all like Juniper a little.

Grace : Per is ok now.

elskon : good, then let's get out of here.

Grace : with pleasure. and lock the door?

elskon : <grin> Why not.

As alters are helped and darkones are destroyed, the system gets more peaceful and the multiple's stress is reduced. Sometimes the host doesn't know what is helping or how, but suddenly, for the first time in years, she may be able to sleep in her bed rather than in a closet, or she can sleep with her husband without hating him. But if the root causes of her multiplicity are not corrected, the multi will soon revert back into chaos, so you can't quit half way.

elskon : What can you tell me about door 4?

Grace : it is in age order

elskon : Yes, but what is behind it?

Grace : oh, nothing like the other three. The person in 4 is the opposite of three. She is good and she is a little older, maybe 9

elskon : then why is she locked away?

Grace : she was fighting always with the mother

elskon : ok, I'll drill a hole again and you can look. (drilling) I will also ask God to send light . . . Gen 1:3 "And God said, Let there be light: and there was light."

Grace : she is Rose, a good girl

elskon : Yes, and how is she?

Grace : she is saying, "Hiroshi, I know you are there."

elskon : ah, I am setting a pitcher of the Water of Life beside her and loaves of the Bread of Life. Ask her to eat and drink.

Grace : she wishes to share, for us to have bread together

elskon : OK, Hiroshi, I will ask God to put a wall of fire around her in case her intents are evil.

Grace : I mean no disrespect but that is not needed she is very good.

elskon : OK, The mother is no longer here so she will have nothing to fight. If she then eats the Bread of Life and drinks the Water of Life, we can ask her to take over the baby sitting chores.

Grace : ah, a method to what I was sure was madness... opening another door that is.

elskon : lol . . . I do try to think things through, Hiroshi.

Grace : she is sitting on a mat with the water and the bread and wishes for us to sit with her. she is so soft looking and gentle, and she serves us tea made with the Water of Life.

elskon : how nice, let us drink and eat together.

When served tea, the cup is always placed so the most elegant side faces the guest. It is polite to admire the cup, then turn it so the beautiful side faces the hostess. Both Rose and Hiroshi smile when they see me do so.

Elskon : I turn the flower on the cup to face her. She is a gracious hostess and I thank her.

Grace : I feel she should be called LovelyRose, Beloved good girl.

elskon : Then so she shall be.

Grace : she knows your voice because she can always hear the goings on.

Ah, since both Rose and Juniper are aware of what happens in the rest of the system, this system probably has a split core. Not unusual. When inside, the host (Grace) hears nothing so she is probably not part of the core.

I remember another system that had a very dominant host who was always demanding control. She knew she wasn't the core, nevertheless, she kept trying to get the other alters to merge into her. It never worked. Her merges soon broke apart and the real core went into hiding. Last I heard she was still a multiple, hopping from therapist to therapist looking for help. Point being: When a merge should take place (and with whom) cannot be determined by the host or therapist. Merges happen naturally when conflicts between the two correct alters are completely eliminated. You can guide the multiple a little, but the timing of the merge is up to the multi herself.

elskon : In the future we'll leave this door unlocked

elskon : Now Rose, we wish you to be free, and we know you would like something to do, so would you like to help with the little children? We would not wish to impose on your time, so the choice is yours.

Grace : Kind sir, I would do most anything you would ask, but the care of those children may be beyond my ability.

elskon : ah, well I will ask Jesus to send angels to help you with anything too difficult. Psa 34:7 "The angel of the LORD encampeth round about them that fear him, and delivereth them."

Grace : I have a little Bible, it has that verse in there. I am sorry I am so forward (blushing)

elskon : <smile> say what you wish

Grace : I know it is not becoming to me, but I have so longed for someone to talk to. I have always wanted happy children.

elskon : I understand. I trust Hiroshi will talk to you from time to time and the girl in room 2 needs to learn how. Could you teach her, that shouldn't be too difficult?

Grace : Is she the one the mother tried to carry out the ritual vows with?

elskon : I'm not sure, but Jesus has done much to heal her, right now she needs love and friendship most of all.

Grace : This is what I would like to do. I would like to spend a little time with them at first and then take care of them a little more each time .

elskon : of course, that is very wise. Do as you wish.

Grace : thanking you, apologizing that I have nothing to offer you.

elskon : You have been most gracious. Thank you for the tea, as informal as we may have been. Hiroshi and I will take our leave of you now.

Grace : Wishing you well, it has been my honor, acknowledging honor

elskon : (returning bow)

elskon : Ok, Hiroshi, lets let this lady bathe and dress. The door can remain unlocked but we will close it for her privacy, she is entitled to it. Oh, and do remind her of the barrier in room 1 that she must not cross.

Grace : sir, you have a strange way of doing things sometimes, I really did not want to go there but now I could give you a warrior hug

elskon : lol, how about a handshake instead (offering hand)

Grace : an honor

elskon : <grin>

Grace : and I cannot refrain from yelling, YAHOOOOOOOO. no baby sitting!

elskon : lol, Well, I think we have done all we should for one evening.

Grace : I thought that before we went to room 4, smile

elskon : Things are going very well. Jesus got rid of one really bad demon.

Grace : yes, and no more babysitting!

elskon : That was for your sake, my friend. <grin>

Grace : And I sure thank you for it. (Backing away with respect and honor)

elskon : Returning bow

9 THE SHRINE

Some alters are not very cooperative and they can even be a little sneaky, but calling them on it is usually counterproductive. At our next meeting I assume Grace is out, but an alter who doesn't want to identify herself is here instead. She wants to get something across to me without me knowing who she is . . .

Grace : I need to say some things to you and to ask you some things.

elskon : ok, say and ask what you wish.

Grace : Thanking you. When I first started speaking with you, I knew I wanted to, but I was tormented with doubt. I thought that somehow you had hypnotized me.

People hear so much idiocy about how awful MPD is that many multis refuse to accept their condition. I remember one multi who doubted her condition even after she had seen inside several times and knew her alters by name. But if someone has no childhood memories, loses time, sees inside and has alters . . . in other words, if it quacks . . .

elskon : LOL, I am not into hypnosis, I wouldn't even know how.

Grace : My mother's voice was speaking to me in my head..... she was real sick

elskon : sounds more like an evil spirit than hypnosis .<smile>

Grace : We have a bad seed family, I do not wish this to be so for my children

elskon : Of course not, but you could have ancestral demons passed down through up to four generations. Here is why . . .

elskon : Go back three or four generations, did your family know God or hate Him?

Grace : In my family? they did not follow Jesus.

elskon : Is it possible they were Shintoist or Buddhist? If so, Here is what God says: Exo 20:5 “Thou shalt not bow down thyself to (false gods) . . . for I the LORD thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me.”

elskon : Other religions are energized by demons and “third and fourth generation” is the operative phrase there.

elskon : So ancestral spirits can be assigned to a child or the child can be given to Satan through ritual . . . but it is easy enough to fix.¹

Grace : Almost everyone I know was married in Shinto shrine and married in Buddhist temple anymore. You can find even Shinto shrines in Buddhist temples.

elskon : Ah, so you could easily have an ancestral spirit assigned to you.

Grace : I guess what I am saying is that in my past I would have both so I would need to do two things, one you do for Buddha and the one you do for Shinto.

elskon You have a shrine there?

Grace : how do you know these things so quickly, I did not tell you that. It is in the recess of my mind a place a combination of Buddha and Shinto...

Grace : it has the Shinto torii gateway out front, but inside are Shinto legends with Buddhist deities all mixed.

elskon : where is that shrine?

Grace : It does not come to me

And suddenly this alter gets suspicious and remembers nothing. I'm a bit slow here, but I finally figure I'm talking to Juniper who chose not to identify herself . . .

elskon : ah, well I think we can find it, but when we do, are you willing to see the shrine destroyed?

Grace : maybe it was just in my imagination

In a previous talk I learned there were two trap doors under Hiroshi's room, and right here Juniper tells me that the shrine is the foundation of the house. In other multiples, the house was a barrier

¹ See Appendix A for a prayer addressing this issue. We have e-mailed a copy of that prayer to many multiples, all of whom claim it helped. The usual deliverance methods of dealing with demons do not work very well in multiples. Consequently, we use the biblical principles detailed in Dr. Neil T. Anderson's book, *The Bondage Breaker*.

that kept them from the fountain of the Water of Life. The house is usually destroyed during the healing process, but it sounds like Juniper, a known Shintoist, would like to prevent it.

elskon : I believe I know where it is.

Grace : well, here is what Juniper says, "to destroy the shrine is to destroy my foundation."

Ah, a good guess, it was Juniper, but I play like I don't know it yet.

elskon : I like her very much, by the way <smile>

elskon : That shrine is not your system's foundation. Your foundation is Jesus: Eph 2:20 "And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone."

Grace : May I speak?

elskon : Of course Juniper, but please do identify yourself, I didn't know who I was talking to for a while.

Juniper is this system's organizer/punisher, but she is so disruptive that Hiroshi banned her from coming into the house. She stays in the shrine where she can be beyond Hiroshi's control. The shrine has a separate door to the outside so Juniper can take control of the system if she wishes without the others knowing about it.

Grace : Grace is asleep and I won't be long. I am trying to tell the importance of the shrine so you will not do something foolish.

elskon : tell me whatever you wish.

Grace : the shrine is in the foundation of the house, and if you destroy it you will destroy the house. I just didn't want you to blow up the shrine and destroy us all in the process.

Juniper is now making every effort to save her shrine, but it has to go if Grace is to be integrated. Alters need to be of like mind to merge and having two religions inside would prevent it.

elskon : ah, but Jesus may destroy the house all on His own. This may not be where He wants you to live later on.

Grace : I do not know why it is you like me, I do not care for you. Grace has episodes now that make it difficult for her.

elskon : It is those episodes I am here to stop . . . If I go, they will only get worse and there will be nobody to stem the tide.

Grace is now spending a lot of time in bars, drinking heavily and neglecting her duties at home. If this isn't corrected soon, it will effect the close bond she has with her husband and hurt her children.

Grace : We were fine before the unmentionable happened. I wish to kill those men..... not just wish, I long to kill them..... it is my vision, my dream!

elskon : I don't blame you.

Grace : But Grace has none of these feelings... she is trying to deny it happened. Those men are worthless.

Many alters have such horrific pasts that denial is quite common. Their memories do need to be dealt with, but you try to get alters to hand those mems up to Jesus without having them suffer through them again. Most alters are in enough pain as it is.

elskon : They may be worthless, but your hatred of them may not be the answer. Would you share a drink with me?

Grace : you wish to drink with me? you don't want a flowery tea ceremony do you?

elskon : Nothing so formal, I was offering to break the Bread of Life with you and drink also of the Water of Life.

Grace : You wish to eat and drink with me and I don't even like you? You put me in a difficult situation here. You know that I cannot refuse your hospitality, so what can I say?

Many dark alters in other systems have refused to eat or drink with me making it more difficult to work with them, so I am thankful for this very Japanese attitude. Drinking the Water of Life and eating the Bread of Life invariably help an alter's negative attitude, maybe not much at first, but over time the change can be dramatic.

elskon : Ah, well here is a glass of the Water of Life and a portion of the Bread of Life. We can share.

Grace : you are a very strange person

elskon : (drinking and eating) I wish only well for you.

Grace : then why do you do these things to Grace

elskon : All I have done is help her. Haven't you noticed her sleeping better? She isn't getting drunk every night and she is pillowing like she used to.¹

¹ Pillowing is a Japanese euphemism for making love.

Grace : she is sleeping better and she is more at ease with “the man,” that is true, but other things happen to her, headaches, nausea, skin hurting.

Notice that Juniper calls Akira “the man” and not “my husband.” All alters are not married to the husband, some may even hate him. Usually only one or two alters consider themselves married. In this system only Grace is the wife to Akira.

elskon : well, Juniper, you cause headaches by pushing out. If switching is done slowly, there will be no headache. The nausea and skin hurting are because of what Grace has seen in the rooms. Those hurts will soon go away.

Grace : but I didn't want you to blow up the shrine and blow up the house, but now you know where it is

Grace : sigh

elskon : It will not be my decision. I believe Jesus will want you to live near the Fountain of Life. It is very nice there, with many angels about.

Grace : you know where the shrine is, right?

elskon : yes, it is under those trap doors, under Hiroshi's room. I was going to throw light grenades in there anyway, but they will not go off unless Jesus wants them to.

Grace : you see? you wish to destroy us all, blow us all up.... I know grenades.

Mercy, this alter is paranoid. I am not going to kill anyone and I believe she knows it.

Grace : kill all the inside so Grace will be at peace..... go ahead, get rid of us.

elskon : <sigh> The scripture grenades only hurt darkones and demonic things.

Grace : so it has been said of us.

So Juniper herself believes she might be a demon.

elskon : Well, I know you are not a demon because you drank the Water of Life with me. If you had been a demon, that water would have destroyed you instantly. So those scripture grenades won't hurt you either.

Grace : may I excuse myself now (backing away)

That was rather abrupt, so I guess Juniper is less than thrilled with me. Now Grace comes out. Understandably, she can't get that gang

rape out of her mind, nor can she ignore the wall that it's building between her and Akira, her husband. But despite her many problems, Grace is still getting better . . .

Grace : I will tell you of the good thing. I overslept this morning, which is rare. Akira brought me tea and a chrysanthemum from the garden. He said it was good to see me resting.

Grace : Is this a wrong thing to tell you?

elskon : Smiling, I think I like your husband. Is he Japanese?

Grace : Yes, I met him at his office. can I ask you a question?

elskon : of course

Grace : if your wife had the same unmentionable thing happen to her, would you be able to "take it" and still be close?

elskon : I believe so, but I would need some time to get over it. I would not be angry at my wife, but I would feel murderous towards the men who harmed her.

Grace : I am lying to Akira about the unmentionable... this is causing harm to me. I never keep anything away from him.

elskon : Well, if you give the lies to Jesus, all of them, you will feel better. Right now you are keeping a dark secret from Akira and that's building a wall between you.

I know Grace will eventually have to tell Akira everything or it will torment her for the rest of her life. Others might be able to forget it, but not this stately Japanese lady. It will be tough on her, so in my opinion, this issue shouldn't be addressed while she is so fragile.

Grace : when you are close like Akira and I, some of it shows.

elskon : of course, so I think He strongly suspects the truth.

Grace : sigh

elskon : I think you should forget it for now and give it to Jesus.

Let the Lord decide when you should tell Akira. It might be tomorrow or it could be 10 years from now.

elskon : One thing for sure, Jesus doesn't want either of you to suffer for an incident that was beyond your power to prevent.

Grace : I am so sorry. I will try not to talk of it any more.

elskon : If you didn't talk about it to someone (if you internalized it), you would never get over it.

Grace : this is true, I have the heaviness of juniper with me

elskon : Ah yes, juniper. I didn't know you knew her. I told her Jesus may want to destroy the Buddhist shrine.

Grace : the last Buddhist wedding I went to, I was sitting there and all of a sudden I saw big black rats running around all over the floor. I knew I was the only one who saw them.

elskon : ah, do you know what they probably represent? evil spirits, demons.

Grace : are you sure?

elskon : No, but I think so. May I ask you a question? Did the unmentionable event of a year ago bring the house into being?

There is a long pause and Juniper appears . . .

Grace : I see the one I like little is still here

elskon : <grin> Why hello Juniper, thank you for switching slowly. See? No headache.

Grace : I waited while you asked your many questions when all you really want is to destroy the temple.

elskon : I said it would be Jesus' decision, why not go to the fountain and ask Him yourself?

Grace : I do not wish to speak to Him.

elskon : Maybe seeing His light would help you: Gen 1:3 "And God said, Let there be light: and there was light." That light is brighter than day.

Grace : how is it you do this thing and where does this strong command come from?

elskon : It is from the Bible. I do this so you can see evil and know that the God I serve is the only One with true power.

elskon : I am also asking God to light the shrine . . . Gen 1:3 "And God said, Let there be light: and there was light." Only evil spirits and dark alters hate the light.

Grace : OOOOoooooooooooo..... there is yelling and screeching and the soldiers are chasing and there is lightness coming from the center. there is fighting of some kind and yelling

elskon : I will ask God to light everywhere the darkones try to flee.

Grace : and I can hear one little voice. it is the little whisper voice of someone praying in the house.

Juniper can't do anything, she is in the Shinto/Buddhist shrine, but I know it is little Rose who is praying for the system . . .

Grace : I have never seen the shrine in light

elskon : Please forgive my rudeness for asking, but if there is fighting inside, maybe I should talk to Hiroshi.

Grace : ok

Juniper switches (not slowly enough) and Hiroshi comes out . . .

Grace : We are raging victory, sir, but we do not know what happened.

elskon : I asked God to send light into the shrine. I'll wager your Samurai are not bored now. I told you there would be battle. So tell me the situation.

Grace : the dark things came pouring in, but we were all there and ready

elskon : came from where?

Grace : from the west, from the floor, from under the house.

elskon : I believe it, ok this is what I think we should do: Here are sunglasses for everyone on God's side. Tell everyone to put them on so they will not be blinded.

elskon : I am going to ask Jesus to send the cleansing light of His Word on all of the enemy SEVEN TIMES brighter than day

Grace : Rose prays

elskon : I figured as much . . . OK, here we go . . .

Gen 1:3 "And God said, Let there be light: and there was light."

Though only shown once, I actually quote the verse seven times.

elskon : SEVEN TIMES brighter than day!

Grace : amazing

elskon : When the enemy is finished, I will ask God to bring the light back to normal.

Grace : the dark things are as tar... immobile.... sticky black tar

elskon : yes, Now oh Lord, please send your rain and your great wind to clean up this mess, Thank you Lord Jesus.

Grace : and the men that have been covered with tar it will wash them as well

elskon : yes, and they can bathe at the waterfall. here are bars of hyssop soap for each of them in accordance with Psa 51:7

"Purge me with hyssop, and I shall be clean: wash me, and I shall be whiter than snow."

I know Hiroshi is out, but things were happening so fast I didn't have the chance to greet him properly . . .

elskon : By the way Hiroshi, It is good to see you <smile>

Grace : Greetings to you as well

elskon : Here are glasses of the Water of Life for all.

Grace : accepting with respect and honor

elskon : (returning bow) the issue was never in doubt. Jesus always wins.

elskon : Well, Hiroshi, lets go to those trap doors, I want you to shout the following words down the trap doors . . .

I quote the following verses to Hiroshi: Eph 1:19-23, "And what is the exceeding greatness of his (God's) power to usward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power, Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places, Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come: And hath put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things."

elskon : now SHOUT that very loud and tell me what happens.

Grace : you wish me to tell you as it is? even though I do not understand?

elskon : yes, of course <smile>

Grace : it is quite strange

elskon : is it light down there now?

Grace : it is very light, but the temple things are what is all wrong... temples are brightly colored

Grace : always with red envelopes and all the gods draped everywhere and the little statues and all of that

elskon : yes, and?

Grace : but all of the color with meaning is black and white and shades of gray. well, not really black and white, but like you are looking at them in a photograph.... like they are not real.

elskon : I see <smile>

Hiroshi's description is quite appropriate, and it made me smile. False gods are not real. I've never seen a false prophet or false deity inside, though some darkones do pretend to be Jesus. If Allah was real and as merciful as the Koran claims, you'd think he'd send Muhammad inside to teach the alters that Islam was the true religion, but he never shows. If we should pray to the Virgin Mary, you'd think she'd be inside pointing to her immaculate heart and accepting our prayers, but she isn't there either. If praying to false gods or reading from pseudo-scriptures worked, then spinning a Buddhist prayer wheel or quoting from the Koran should send light into darkness and drive out demons, but they don't. Only the Bible does those things and the only deity we see inside is Jesus.

Grace : but at the altar there is recent offering of food and there are envelopes and incense. It is only the food that tells you the offerings are new... it is fresh

elskon : It was probably put there by Juniper. Well, put your rifle on spray and wet the temple and the altar down really good.

Grace : ok.... black and white and gray dripping together. the ceiling kites too?

elskon : yes, everything in your sight.

Grace : black and white.... dripping and swirling together down the walls to the floor... it is strange.. black and white together and yet on the floor it is clean. where does it go?

elskon : There is much water on the floor and the Water of Life cleans everything of death.

Grace : the walls are not watermarked or dirty... they are white

Grace : the fruit was black and the alter gods were black but now they are destroyed, I have done as you asked but I would never have done this otherwise

elskon : <sigh> I know, but God's word says to do it. . . .

Exodus 20:2-3 "I am the LORD thy God . . . Thou shalt have no other gods before me."

elskon : ok, and how does everything look now?

Grace : clean and bright... the furniture is gone

The shrine was underground – the foundation for the house. It has now been destroyed so the house changes. There isn't a basement anymore.

elskon : wonderful, are we still under your room?

Grace : No, there is a door here and it opens directly to the garden.... the tea room is back.

Grace : for this I would give up many nights of sleep.... I wish to thank you and your Jesus

elskon : You joined His army, too, remember? I recruited you, so He is your Jesus, too.

Grace : Jesus says we may suffer a loss

elskon : what loss is that?

Grace : choice.... the only one for whom choice is possible

elskon : Ah, Juniper?

Grace : you have said it

elskon : I am saddened for anyone who has a choice and might choose badly.

Grace : ah, I tire (should not admit this I know) but the fighting was severe Perhaps we could stop just for a minute for you to speak with Grace?

elskon : I would be glad to. Also, would you please allow Juniper to come and speak to Jesus?

Grace : I will allow it and command the other warriors to allow it, but she may not wish it (backing away)

elskon : ok (returning bow)

Long pause and then we hear from Grace . . .

Grace : eli? where are you

elskon : Hello Grace. look inside, I have a surprise for you

Grace : oooh my, but how? how did this happen?

elskon : Jesus did it of course, and the shrine is gone.

Grace : my place... my special place.... my tea room is there

Grace : my very special place... excuse the tears, I am sorry

elskon : Wait until Akira sees you. He will be delighted. How can you hide your happiness? Even if you could, would you want to?

elskon : It is not over yet, but much good has been done

Grace : Feeling like I do right now is more than I can ask for and maybe more than Akira could ask for.

Grace : May I take my leave?

elskon : Of course. Just remember to thank the Lord Jesus for what He has done.

Grace : I thank Jesus all the time (backing away with respect and honor)

elskon : (returning bow) and smiling

10 JUNIPER

elskon : Juniper is sad because the shrine is gone, but if she turns to Jesus her sadness will be over.

Grace : Hiroshi gives me a pushing to come out. But Juniper when she wishes something she gives me heaviness in my head.

elskon : I believe it is time we bring Juniper's heaviness to an end. Would it be permissible for me to talk to Hiroshi?

Grace : certainly

In multiple circles, asking to speak to a different alter is a no-no, but little can be done with Grace so she is happy to switch in. Hiroshi is a defender and defenders are the easiest to work with.

Grace : It is Hiroshi honoring your presence and grateful you have come. I am much disturbed over Juniper coming inside the house but I do not wish to be disrespectful

elskon : Returning bow. I see no disrespect, but you and the other warriors can surely handle her. I believe it is wise to chain her to the waterfall.

Grace : Handle her? Bringing her under our control?

Grace : First, I will tell you of my feeling.... The ones that are here... some are good and some are bad, but all have souls worth the saving

Grace : but Juniper? while they were working for a cause she was breaking it down. I see the others as flowers in different stages of bloom. I see Juniper as a weed like a thistle that will spread its seeds without anyone knowing and kill the flowers before they bloom.

elskon : I hear an appropriate Japanese metaphor <smile>

Grace : I am greatly troubled by this... She is Juniper, and the girls are Juni, Nip, and Per, are they not linked together, I think, but I am not given to great thought.

So Hiroshi is aware of the mirror relationship, but doesn't understand it or know what to do about it.

elskon : Well, this is my belief: If we chain Juniper in the Waterfall, the water can cure her heart. Do you see another way to deal with her? We cannot allow her to be loose.

Grace : I do not know... but there is one more thing..... the door to room six is open.... all the way open.

elskon : who was in six?

Grace : you will think me odd, it was a thing and not a person... a statue... it was separated from Grace because of the feelings she felt for it.

elskon : ah, was the statue destroyed when the shrine fell?

Grace : no it has been taken by someone

elskon : ok, we will find it. Meanwhile, I am bricking up the window in room six and making it escape proof. Please escort Juniper into that room and lock her in.

It may seem a bit harsh to lock Juniper away, but it is less harsh than the system's defender has already been to her. Hiroshi sees her as a danger to the system, so she needs help to become more acceptable to the rest of her alters. This is how it was accomplished . . .

Grace : you feel that this is the purpose for this room?

elskon : It is now. And when we find the statue, we will melt it down with the Water of Life.

Grace : Akito¹ and I will try to capture her... She is very angry at you.

elskon : Well someone being angry at me isn't unique, <smile> call the other warriors if you need them.

Grace : Juniper has the statue

elskon : Why am I not surprised? Wet the statue down and throw a grenade at it. The light of God's word will destroy it.

Grace : She ran but Akito and Saito have taken her down.

elskon : good, now lock Juniper in room six.

Grace : she is so angry... ouch... sorry.... we are putting her in the room and closing the door and Saito will guard

¹ All of Hiroshi's Samurai have names. Akito and Saito are two of them.

152 *The Shining Man*

elskon : I promised I would not hurt her.

Grace : well, she hates you anyway... she is screaming at you

elskon : ok, here is an escape proof lock, lock the door with it. I am giving you one key, I have the other.

Grace : ok.. But she sure is mad... she says you left her and never came back.... and you destroyed her place.

I don't remember leaving her anywhere, but those Scripture grenades did destroy her shrine. Scriptural devices only harm demonic things, so that shrine did have to go.

elskon : I am drilling a hole in her door (drilling). Now here is a hose, put one end high up in the waterfall and the other in the hole.

Grace : she is blocking the hole so we cannot see in

elskon : she will not be able to stand against water pressure.

Grace : I hope it knocks her on her.... sorry

elskon : lol, now here is a sealant to seal the door, seal it all around.

Grace : ok, is sealed

elskon : now fill the room to neck depth

Grace : she went right to the other wall ... she isn't screaming now... knocked the wind right out of her it did

elskon : yeah, I am not doing this to be mean, that water can heal her. It can change her heart. I am also asking God to send much light of truth about His Son Jesus into the room.

elskon : Gen 1:3 "And God said, Let there be light: and there was light."

Grace : she has a very stunned look on her face.... never have seen that woman with nothing to say.

That light is opening her heart a little.

Grace : this water is instead of putting her in the fountain?

elskon : yes, it is the same water. You were worried she might hurt the system if left free, so room 6 is the alternative.

elskon : She can't hurt anyone in her room and if that water was any deeper she'd have to swim. <smile>

Grace : Eli? It is a good thing that you have done this... this was a good plan.

elskon : thank you (bowing) and you are a good Samurai.

You do some things to keep the other alters from feeling too anxious. Chaining Juniper in the waterfall would have been just as effective, but Hiroshi would have always worried about it.

Grace : honoring you further with respect... you are a wise man
elskon : That's not a universally held opinion. <grin> Now please tell Juniper I am not her enemy. She is here for her safety and for the safety of others. The alternative would have been seppuku and the Water of Life is preferable.

Grace : most definitely... She glares in return... but at least she is not shrieking

elskon : I will now ask God through His Spirit to reveal Jesus in her heart, if it is His will to do so. If she turns against the witness of the Holy Spirit, this is the result:

I quote the correct Scripture: Mat 12:31 "Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men."

elskon : I know she does not wish that result.

Grace : she says we can do with her what we will but Grace will never make it without her.

elskon : OK, seal the hole.

Grace : are you angry?

elskon : LOL, no, of course not, though I am sorry for her.

Grace : sorry for her, what will happen to her?

elskon : I don't know, Jesus said she could make the wrong decision.

Grace : He says you have done right with her.

elskon : Let's ask Jesus if there is anything else you should do for Juniper, and how we should handle her in the future?

Grace : He says, "the three children must be told that she has come to the inside and she must be reminded she is here." He says, "many things will happen and a time will come when she begs to know Him"

Grace : Now we must now go tell the children that Juniper is in the house. I am to speak to them.

Hiroshi goes to each room and says, "Juniper has come to join us in the house." Each of the children give him a little boxed gift for Juniper. Rose also has gifts for Juniper, her love and her little Bible (which I

154 *The Shining Man*

quickly replace). We drain the Water of Life from Juniper's room, tell her about the children and give her the gifts . . .

Grace : Juniper, this is Hiroshi, I come bringing you greetings from Juni, Nip and Per. They are here in the house with us.

Grace : I am bearing gifts from them. Juni, Nip and Per wish to acknowledge your presence but they are unable to come to the door themselves. I also bear a gift from Rose.

Grace : this is a very strange doing

elskon : yes, I know. now pull the plug out of the little hole and see what is happening.

Grace : there is a shelf around the room and she has put the gifts from the children on the shelf... she is opening them, one is Rose's Bible. she does not seem to know we see her.

Amazing isn't it? Look at the change in Juniper. We had a spitting cobra just an hour or so ago and now there's a difference, maybe not much of one, but it's a start.

Grace : We are to leave her for now....but Jesus said we had to give her the gifts for the return of the giving. I have now completed my most curious of assignments.

elskon : Yes, it was very interesting. but have you noticed how Juniper has changed? she is no longer screaming and angry

Grace : she is the one that I would have gladly put my sword through at your request.

elskon : <smile> I know, but I suspected Jesus wanted her alive for a future purpose.

Grace : You knew this already?

elskon : yes

Grace : may I share with you? I am ashamed. I would have killed them all. Even the children... for I felt them all evil. But then... doors appeared for each one and I put them away.

elskon : It is ok, Hiroshi, but to kill them would have been a great loss. Each has something to contribute to the system or Jesus would not have put them here.

Grace : Can you see what we are doing? I meant can you see what we are doing inside when we are doing it.

elskon : No, I can only see what you tell me.

Grace : Grace has come to the door, backing away with respect.

elskon : returning bow

Long pause for the switch . . .

elskon : Grace?

Grace : yes this is Grace, it has been two hours, where was I?

elskon : I have been working with Hiroshi. you have been inside for that time.

Grace : it sounds impossible

elskon : If you wish to look inside you will see changes

Grace : part of my house is missing the place where Juniper would go down and I would go across.... it upsets me a little

elskon : Hiroshi is there, ask him if all is not well.

Grace : He smiles that ridiculous cat that ate the canary smile

Grace : I am missing something..... a weight

elskon : and you are complaining?

Grace : not so... I am very glad

Grace : Please swear to me you really understand what is going on

elskon : I do. How could I help you if I didn't? Just look at yourself and see how much better you feel. You are much unburdened.

Grace : I feel better, but I feel very alone right now.

Feeling alone is common after a major merge or when an important alter is put away. Most ex-multiples miss their alters for quite a while, some eventually forget how to see inside. Many even forget most of what took place there.

Grace : how I feel right now is like when you are child and home is bad. It may be bad but still it is home.

elskon : Well, change always makes people feel uncomfortable for a while. You feel a bit alone because Juniper is no longer supporting or "driving" you.

After several lengthy chats, it became apparent that Grace really needs Juniper's strength and drive. By herself, Grace was a heavy drinker and rather ineffectual. She could fake it for a while, but she would not be able to keep her home going without Juniper's help.

elskon : Your house is changing, becoming lighter and less complicated. That is very good but also a bit unsettling.

elskon : Hiroshi's grin should show you that things are really alright.

Grace : yes and there are others with such a grin

elskon : grins all around <smile>

Grace : and open doors.... and a tea house... a peaceful garden

Grace : I would like to know of Juniper? Did she make a good choice? I do not feel the sadness anywhere.

elskon : she is now in room six, but she cannot get out until Jesus says it is ok. I do not know about her choice yet, but she seems better.

Grace : eli?

elskon : yes

Grace : she is the one who told me I could not tell Akira about the unmentionable. She kept telling me they will not listen.... they will not love me, they will not, they will not.

elskon : ok, but what does Jesus say?

Grace : Ask Him now?

elskon : sure

Grace : don't leave me

Grace : He says, "I have the spirit of truth in me. Juniper did not have the spirit of truth in her." is she gone?

elskon : no, Jesus is healing her, but it will take some time. She is in the house, in room six

Grace : I will miss her, she is my "driver."

elskon : You will do fine and she won't be locked up forever.

Grace : I do not wish to be rude.... my family is calling me, but I am so excited about what is happening.

elskon : you are doing just great.

Grace : thank you very much and goodnight

elskon : Goodnight with a smile.

If you've been reading carefully, you've noticed that Grace is relaxing. There is less of the timid formal Japanese lady and more of her Yale alumna outgoing self. A remarkable change in just a few weeks. She is less fearful and much better adjusted, so what we are doing is actually helping her. We meet a few days later with Hiroshi out . . .

Grace : greetings, honored friend

elskon : greetings (returning bow). So tell me, how is everything inside?

Grace : The gifts given to Juniper are being accepted by her, and when she has taken each one into her heart she will return each one..... and in so doing she will reunite the spirit of one.

Hiroshi is telling of a ritual gift exchange that Juniper must make before she can merge with the children.

Grace : Juniper must go to them, the children are not to be forced in any way to accept her.

elskon : I understand, so let's go to Juniper's room and look through the little drilled hole.

Grace : we haaaaaave ccccoooooompany here beside us.....

bowing very low, for He is here

elskon : ah, I am bowing as well

Note that I in no way suggested the presence of Jesus. Jesus was there on His own and Hiroshi saw Him on his own.

Grace : this requires His presence, looking in this room?

elskon : Ask Him to say, "Jesus Christ is come in the flesh."

Always check for safety . . .

Grace : Most highly honored sir, please say, "Jesus Christ is come in the flesh."

Grace : He has stated so, "Jesus Christ is come in the flesh."

elskon : Very well, ask Him what He wishes of us

Grace : He wishes us to talk to Juniper

elskon : very well, let us do so.

Grace : Juniper it is Hiroshi and my friend Eli. Eli has sent in a bed and a pillow for you and a pitcher of the Water of Life and a loaf of the Bread of Life

Grace : She says you make her so angry, first you leave her alone and destroy her temple, then you send in a bed and a pillow.... you make her suffer in gratitude for the kindness that she cannot deny.

elskon : I wish her no ill

Neither Hiroshi or I are in control of what happens next. Jesus himself knows how He will deal with Juniper. The mental health community would claim all the following is only in Grace's mind, but too many similar incidents happen in too many systems for me to accept their rationale.

Grace : Jesus has spoken.... He says "I have spoken well about her suffering in gratitude for kindness that she cannot deny for it will be same when she faces Him."

elskon : yes, Jesus died for you Juniper. He has given you the gift of Life through His death.

Grace : He has entered the room and she cannot take her eyes off of Him

Grace : He is saying to her... "The three gifts from the children represent forgiveness and she shall forgive the wrongs she suffered, but she must know she is a wrongdoer herself."

Grace : He says... "Juniper, I have shown Myself to you, and I will do no more." (He seems kind of harsh)

elskon : Probably not harsh, but very firm.

Grace : He did not turn away from her, He was backing out of the room and not saying anything.

elskon : If she rejects His offer, she will be destroyed. <sigh>

Grace : and when He was to come to this side, she started screaming and crying and begging Him not to leave

Grace : (I am telling you He seemed stern) He said to her very stern... "Why is it I should stay?"

Grace : Juniper, cry to Jesus to save you... do not be lost

Grace : She is begging Jesus to stay.

elskon : Tell her she must give her heart to Jesus and confess Him as her only Lord.

Grace : He has said.... "I will only ask one more time, why is it I should stay. Without an answer I am gone."

Grace : Juniper, please give you heart to the Jesus who has come in the flesh. Confess Him as your only Lord.

Grace : Well, she did not do exactly that but He has taken a step toward her. She has said, with tears, in a very small, not so Juniper like way..... I need you.

elskon : He will always help those who call on Him with an honest heart.

Grace : She is weeping, sobbing..... not becoming

Grace : uuggghhhh.... this is very incorrect.... weeping is not becoming.... display of emotion is unacceptable

elskon : It may be necessary for her

Grace : Juniper has listened to this.... "you have spoken with your heart. For some this is easy, for you it will not be so easy but not impossible."

elskon : I see

Grace : then He gives her the little book and He says.... "you will know what must be done and there is no other way."

Jesus is telling Juniper there is no other way to be saved except through Him: John 14:6 "Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me."

Grace : She is screaming to us to not let Him go, but we have no control.

elskon : Of course not, we have no control over the true Son of Heaven. We are fortunate that He permits us to be His servants.

Grace : He has said.... "be mindful of the gifts for they have come by the children through Him and He will not allow them to suffer above what they have already suffered."

Grace : He has left and I would like to think He nodded at her as He left, was I seeing things?

elskon : No, He has saved her because she asked, but her future road will not be an easy one.

Grace : Juniper, it is I, Hiroshi. May I be of help to you?

Grace : she is angry at me and you... more at me I think

elskon : Mercy, what have we done now? it is time for forgiveness, not anger. Anger could be her destroyer.

Grace : I must go to her for I am in need of forgiveness from her

elskon : ok, here is a loaf of the Bread of Life and a pitcher of the Water of Life. Let us give them to her.

Grace : you will enter with me?

elskon : sure, though all I have done is try to save her.

Grace : You did wrong me too, you left me. You promised you would return to me. You left me and then destroyed my temple and you never came back.

Grace : You left me standing there. And I could not go anywhere. and I waited for you

elskon : I didn't destroy your temple, the Water of Life did, and it would not have done so if the temple had been good. The Water of Life only destroys evil things.

Grace : Excuse.... Eli? It is Hiroshi

elskon : yes?

Grace : (I am whispering to you so she cannot hear)...she is in a lie.... she had to come in here to get that statue, so she could not have been standing there waiting for you all of the time, so sorry to tell you.

elskon : Thank you. <grinning>

Ah, she's been caught with her hand in the cookie jar. We needed a break like this to be able to reach her. What follows is either very rapid switching or co-consciousness. I don't know which.

elskon : Juniper, you came here to get the statue, you were not standing there waiting for me. If someone lies about you, Jesus

can defend you, but if you lie to yourself, who will come to your defense?

A Long silence

Grace : Well.....

A longer silence

Grace : But.....

A still longer silence

Grace : You.....

Grace : (Hiroshi grins)

elskon : (I'm outwardly stern but inwardly smiling)

Grace : Hiroshi says to Juniper... please respond to Eli. He has been here to help you... I will gladly fall to the floor and beg your forgiveness for anything that lies between us... but I cannot speak, until this is done.

elskon : Juniper, the Son of Heaven humbled Himself to speak to you. Your continued anger and unforgiveness is dishonorable.

Grace : I was desperate

elskon : The Son of Heaven is willing to help you, as am I. But how long will you cling to ways that are dishonorable to Him?

Grace : Hiroshi speaks..... Juniper, excuse are not acceptable.... truth and lies cannot live in same house.

elskon : Juniper, He showed you your sins and how bad they were in His sight, then He forgave you of all. Why will you refuse to forgive those who have sinned against you less?

Grace : (She cries)

Grace : I am not soft or beautiful like your fair Grace, and I am not treasured like the children or even valued like an enemy that might be worth the saving.

elskon : That is true, you are not worth saving, but Jesus loves you anyway and saved you because you are precious in His sight despite your unworthiness.

This is true of us all, none of us are really worth the saving. Jesus saves us, not just because He loves us , but also to be true to His own divine nature. He would not be perfect if He did not provide a way of escape for the creatures He has made.

Grace : He came to me because of me? not for her? or you or you? just me?

elskon : just you. I can see Hiroshi anywhere, and Grace elsewhere, but I am in this room for you and so was Jesus.

Grace : no person has ever said that to me before

Grace : see you have done this again, you have made me like you not so little. I guess I forgive you, but that is senseless, how can I forgive you for doing nothing wrong?

elskon : <smile> well, you can forgive yourself for being angry at both Hiroshi and me, for he didn't do wrong either. He was just concerned for the safety of the system.

Grace : excuse

elskon : yes Hiroshi?

Grace : May I speak to Juniper?

elskon : please do

Grace : I am not sure of my wrong doing Juniper, I tried many times to bring you into the house but the strong pulling against it was overpowering. I am shamed to admit I was so weak, and I am helpless to explain it.

elskon : So Juniper, are you going to be angry at Hiroshi for something he was powerless to prevent?

Grace : Hiroshi says.... I thought you were fighting me and would have no part of the inside

Grace : Juniper says .. I thought you opened the floor and pushed me down

Multiples usually have the memory of abuses buried in one alter or another, but letting go of the bitterness and anger against those who abused them is nearly impossible. An inability to forgive is one reason so many multiples remain right where they are.

elskon : so forgive each other, This bickering is unseemly and it is making me ill. There is always enough wrong to go around.

Grace : Hiroshi says, Juniper and Hiroshi honor each other and Eli with hands crossed, covering heart, and bowing head

elskon : (smiling and returning bow)

Grace : Juniper says, I agree I have caused much grief and perhaps it is beyond the repair

elskon : it is past now and nothing is beyond repair. Take the gifts from the young ones and put them into your heart. Then read the Bible Rose gave you. Here is a chair and a desk for you to sit at and a reading lamp, too.

Grace : Your kindness is valued. I am much tired, but I will take the gifts to my heart and read the book. I have a headache.

elskon : With all that switching, I am not surprised. You have a bed and pillow and here is a blanket. Take your rest if you like and I will speak to you another time

Grace : I shall do so, good night Sir, good night Hiroshi

elskon : I think it is time for Hiroshi and I to take our leave now (returning bow)

Grace : I Hiroshi am here headache and all..... I am sorry for my outbursts... One minute with Jesus and the next a lie... I was incensed

elskon : I need all the help I could get with someone as stubborn as Juniper. <smile>

Grace : I was going to whisper to you somewhere back there.... I knew we should have taken door number one.... but I see it has worked for good..... you have done much work this night

elskon : so have you, Hiroshi. Goodnight, my friend <smile>

Grace : good night kind and honorable sir.

So we now have a different Juniper. The anger and aggressiveness are gone. The end result? She will soon be able to merge with the other alters. That's super important for this system because she appears to be at least part of the core, the birth-child with which all alters must eventually merge.

11

FIRST MERGE

Over the next few days, Hiroshi tells me of himself. When he first came into Grace's system he was by himself, but each time an alter was added, he split, until he eventually had a guard for each alter, two for the garden, and one for the doorway into our world. The rooms just appeared on their own and Hiroshi put an alter into each room to stop the conflict. But with danger to the system passing, his Samurai gathered close around him and pressed into him until Hiroshi became one again. He is now much taller, stronger and smarter, not nearly so formally Japanese, and he begins to see me as an equal and real friend, not as his superior.

Grace : I have need of you.... sorry... this is Hiroshi

elskon : Hello my friend <smile>

Grace : begging pardon

elskon : It's ok, what's the matter?

Grace : it is from room 8, when I go to there they scream U**** and cause great distress and it is troublesome for Grace and she has heard it and she is grieved.

I used asterisks rather than spelling the word out (as it was in the original) because the real word is very distressing to this system.

elskon : U**** ?????

Grace : and it draws the others to her and I am hoping she cannot hear me speak of it

elskon : so what does it mean?

Grace : it is the name but I don't know if we should go to room 8 or help Grace

elskon : Well, if room #8 is causing the problem that is where we should go.

Grace : it is causing great distress... this person causes emotional harm by bringing focus to the far past

Grace : and she is loud beyond belief and she makes the children cry because they try to get to her

Grace : she has a power to draw them into the past or something

Whatever is happening here isn't good. This "emotional attraction" sounds demonic to me. I usually try to win the alters to peace, but gentle persuasion doesn't work for everyone. This alter is upsetting the whole system so rigorous methods may be called for.

elskon : ok, here is a roll of duct tape. Please tape her mouth shut.

Grace : we should be able to do this thing... after all she is only a woman

elskon : wait, is it safe? if not, I will give a roll to an angel and ask him to do it.

Grace : it is difficult

elskon : ok, wait. We'll try another way. I will drill a hole in the door and every time she opens her mouth shoot a stream of the Water of Life into it. <grin>

Grace : oh ok

elskon : (drilling)

Grace : she is deafening

elskon : you have the hole, start shooting

Grace : gasping she is, but she still speaks the U**** word I want them to not hear her anymore

I am beginning to get an uneasy feeling about this alter because she is not reacting in the usual way. She just keeps shouting the U**** word. Maybe she's not an alter at all.

elskon : Here is more water. We'll fill her room if we have to.

Grace : she is soaked, I am missing the mouth because she moves... she holds up one hand maybe to have me stop and the water seems to cling to her

elskon : keep trying to shoot into her mouth

Grace : ok

Grace : she is littler and is sitting down but she is quiet... nothing more is happening

elskon : Here is a tub full of hot Water of Life. I am taking her clothes now and burning them.

Grace : I still have water to her

elskon : Tell her to soap up with this hyssop soap and to get into the tub.

There is a long switching pause. Then Grace comes out and tells me a story. At first I don't think it is connected and I'm getting a little miffed by the interruption, but soon see that it's related . . .

Grace : Eli? can I come out?

Grace : My real name is not Grace, my family called me T..... but later I was named the ancient U.... name by someone. I have buried it deeply somewhere and I want it to stay there.

Grace : but last night it came to me over and over and over and it is a danger to me... it calls me.... oh, it is not a good thing.

elskon : I see, I promised I would never call you by your Japanese name, remember?

Grace : yes, it is from my mind. I am doing it to myself and I can't stop. it is the ancient name that calls me. please, I cannot say it

elskon : It sounds like a demonic assignment, I understand what that is and believe I can help you.

Grace : I cannot bear this for another day, maybe not an hour.

elskon : I will tell you what to say. It must be said OUT LOUD.

Grace : ok

Demons cannot hear a person's thoughts so a prayer of confession and renunciation must be said out loud. That is so important I am going to say it again: Demons can't read a person's mind so prayers of confession and renunciation must be said OUT LOUD! Normally, I ask the person to first make a firm declaration of their faith in Jesus, but Grace has done so many times in earlier chats so I omit it here.

elskon : Say the following OUT LOUD. . . "Lord Jesus, I confess the sins of my ancestors and any demonic assignments they may have laid upon me. I confess any satanic or occult rituals they may have said over me or that I may have been a party to. Lord Jesus, please forgive me for any and all demonic assignments and cover them with your blood."

elskon : OUT LOUD

elskon : Say this as well . . . “Lord Jesus, I confess that my body has been used as an instrument of unrighteousness. I may not remember it all, but I ask you forgive me for all those acts - both remembered and unremembered - I recognize them as sin and ask you to forgive me for them all.”

Grace : there are also pictures

elskon : Ok, confess and renounce any evil in the pictures.

Grace : ok

elskon : Say this also : “I totally renounce every one of the above sins and any sins like them. I turn away from them all and will do them no more. I totally renounce any past or present association with Satan, his angels or his works. I renounce any satanic rituals I may have been party to.”

elskon : “I renounce every sin that is against a Holy God and against His beloved Son, Jesus Christ.”

Grace : I cry

elskon : Say also “All evil spirits, the sins that gave you access are confessed and renounced. I am under the shed blood of Jesus and you are now trespassers. In the name of Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh, every evil spirit given access through the above sins is commanded to depart from me at once, never to return.”

Scripture states, Deu 5:9 “I, the LORD your God, am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers on the children, and on the third and the fourth generations of those who hate Me,” so there are generational sins. Demonic assignments passed down are not unique to this system. I run into them all the time, particularly in occultic or satanic ritual abuse (SRA) victims.

elskon : Say all the above, OUT LOUD!

Grace : I am but I cry. this is very hard and I have to do it for all the peoples in the picture.

elskon : OK, please do so. After you do it all, you should be free.

Grace : all the peoples the little and the big, she had powers over them by her voice.

Grace : sorry, I finish... the picture is changing now

elskon : Once you confess and renounce all ancestral assignments and command those spirits to go in Jesus' name, those spirits are finished.

Grace : ok I sob hard and is over.... she is not there in the picture anymore.

Grace : from nowhere comes this woman standing in the middle of them and says that U.... name and they all stop what they are doing and are drawn to her like magic by only the one name and they will do anything for her.

elskon : she sounds like an ancestral demon to me, but she will bother you no more. The person in room #8 is in the process of being healed. If you said everything I suggested out loud, that demon is now gone.

Grace : so the person in room 8 is not the demon?

elskon : I don't know, I think she is a girl who had the demon. But now that you have told me all this, I better get back to Hiroshi and finish what we were doing with the U**** caller.

Grace : Yes, that is good idea

We talk a for a couple minutes and then Hiroshi . . .

Grace : It is Hiroshi and I am glad to see you

elskon : Yes, and I you. So tell me, how is the person in #8

Grace : Eli? eli? I am looking... theee rooooooooooom is empty no tub no water no person Could she be gone? I do not see her
elskon : ah, if that is the case, she was indeed a demon! Grace renounced her and drove her from the system. I will ask God to please send light to clean it all up.

elskon : Gen 1:3 "And God said, Let there be light: and there was light."

elskon : see anything now?

Grace : the window is bright and shiny clean and there is nothing in the room except the brightness

elskon : wonderful. Well, leave the door open and tell me about room #9

Grace : This girl is seventeen

elskon : is she good or bad?

Grace : I did not know that the one in the last room was so bad

elskon : she was more than bad, she was a demon in disguise as an alter, but she is gone now.

Grace : in room 9, her name is Ann. it is a name for hope... she is not bad... but she hope for way out

elskon : Well, the way out has been provided at the waterfall

Grace : the difficulty for her was like Rose... she was not bad either but she cause great difficulty so she put into room... they cause major disruption and fighting within

elskon : ah, well is it safe to open the door and go talk to her?

Grace : I would think so

elskon : then let us do so. I will go with you.

elskon : First let us give her a large glass of the Water of Life then also a loaf of the Bread of Life. Here also is a cup of hyssop tea with honey for her. let us sit and eat and drink with her.

Grace : ok may she speak with you directly?

elskon : I am setting beside her a tub of hot Water of Life and a bar of hyssop soap. Here also is a new kimono for her, also a towel for her to dry with, and a Bible.

Grace : yes sir she is very humble and she accepts your gifts she is worried she has nothing to return

elskon : It is alright, Ann, you may speak if you wish, but switch slowly.

Grace : Konnichiwa

elskon : (nodding head) So how may I help you?

Grace : Eli sama, I have waited for you to come to my door. You are most honored and I pray to the God I do not know for some answer to our life.

elskon : (returning bow) just eli will do. I am not here with titles

Grace : but the screaming of the U.... caller has been stronger than all within could withstand

elskon : Well, the U**** caller is no more.

Grace : and I cry for happiness because of it

elskon : Do you wish to know the true Son of Heaven?

Grace : I pray to whoever will listen because I do not know who is there

elskon : It is the name of Jesus that defeated the U**** caller

Grace : I know it is not the paper gods or the gold ones

Grace : the name?

elskon : Jesus, Son of the Most High, the true Son of Heaven

Grace : of all heaven?

elskon : of all heaven

Grace : the vast heaven

elskon : of all creation

Grace : of all the peoples and animals

elskon : of everything

I again quote the Appropriate verses: Phil 2:8-11 "And being found in fashion as a man, he (Jesus) humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross. Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name: That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven,

and things in earth, and things under the earth; And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father."

Grace : these words attach themselves to me I am fond of them
elskon : yes, they are truth.

elskon : Would you like to meet this Jesus?

Grace : you are not His messenger? You are not the one to whom I must speak and honor?

elskon : I am His messenger, but He is the One to honor. He will reveal Himself to all who call upon Him with a humble heart.

Grace : I am afraid to meet such a great one

elskon : I am just His servant, it is upon Him you must call.

Grace : and He will come to me?

elskon : Just say out loud, "Lord Jesus, I wish you to become my Lord."

Grace : "Lord Jesus, I wish you to become my Lord."

Grace : I cannot believe this. I am humbled to look to the ground in His presence. I bow to His feet, but the light comes from Him around me and it goes out to the whole house and the whole house is bathed in light

Grace : and He reaches to me for me to come to my feet.

Grace : But I dare not stand in His presence

elskon : I know, but do what He says anyway.

Again Jesus appears on His own. Please note that I am initiating very little here. These interactions and events are happening on their own with no prompting from me.

Grace : He speaks to me... "I am the hope and I need the faith of Rose..." Oh I do not understand His sayings. it is okay? that is all I can hear? "I bring hope to Rose and she brings faith to me and together." I don't understand

elskon : I do, please go to Rose and touch her hand.

Grace : We are not a touching people. so sorry, I do not mean to argue. PLEASE forgive me, eli san

elskon : <smile> It is alright, but this is something you must do.

Grace : I will go but I have nothing to give her

elskon : Yes you do, Jesus told you . . . Hope . . . and she will give you faith

Grace : We are there and she is quiet, I go to her and I say, Rose I have spoken to this Jesus and He has told me that you and I together can..... Rose, I am sorry I do not know the rest of the message because of my lack of understanding.

elskon : So hold her hand and give her your hope. You have much hope, share it.

Grace : Rose, I have not earthly thing to give you, but I can give to you the spirit of hope

Grace : She gives me her hand in a polite manner... palm down..... but I pull her other hand to me and I am holding both hands in mine.

elskon : yes, now look in her eyes

Grace : it is a difficult thing... I am sharing my hope with her but it is coming back to me... like fluid flowing through us together

elskon : ask her for her faith

Grace : I know this makes no sense... she cries great tears and she says she had faith that one day she would understand but she had not hope enough to believe it and she wished to come with me to be together with me.

elskon : With hope she can believe so accept her.

Grace : this is a strange thing because it is so strong I want to fight the strength of it

elskon : please do not fight, it is a healing, you are merging with her into one, just like Jesus said.

Grace : and it is a feeling like sparkles... and this is not an embarrassment for you?

elskon : I have seen it many times, It is not wrong.

Grace : I have a new feeling inside, not just that I hope that everything will be alright, but that I know it will. this is so strange

elskon : <smile> yes, that is faith. You are now Rose and Ann together, so I will call you Roseann

Grace : eli? I do not wish to be rude but I need to rest with the Rose I have inside and lie down in my room.

elskon : OK, resting is very important after a merge and I can talk to Hiroshi, but switch slowly.

Grace : I will be going to my room, leaving you with honor

elskon : (returning bow)

Hiroshi can't wait 20 seconds and comes out immediately . . .

Grace : eli sir? sorry I rushed a little but do you know the change?

elskon : that's ok, it's your headache <smile>

Grace : sense of humor I like it... the house has changed

elskon : yes, I figured it would. Tell me

Grace : Many rooms are gone the rooms just left

elskon : They are gone because they are no longer needed. Rose is now with Ann just as the warriors are now with you. They are becoming one just like you did.

Grace : But what of the voice of U.... she is not one also?

elskon : It is gone forever. Grace renounced the U**** caller and commanded it to leave. It was an evil spirit, a demon.

Grace : Will Roseann take care of the children now? Take Rose's place?

elskon : lol, I see what's bugging you, you are worried about babysitting again. lol lol

Grace : sorry... I am caught... I will do what is required I was hoping it wasn't required

elskon : Forgive me for laughing, my friend, but I could see your mind working.

Grace : it pleases me that you were able to help with U..... because it was destructive.

elskon : Yes, it was a demon and demons are always destructive.

elskon : Want to go to the next room?

Grace : you wish to go to yet another room yet today?

elskon : Why not? we are on a roll and that ended well.

Grace : there is only one that we can go to because we cannot go to the outside until Jesus says

elskon : ok, then lets go to the one room we can. Please tell me about it.

Grace : she is older... twenty one

elskon : ah, then she is the oldest, so tell me about her, her name?

Grace : this is a good person but she has been veiled... as a child she was maeko maemi (honest child with smile of truth)

elskon : yes?

Grace : do you have any idea how difficult that was to type? it was like having a five pound weight on each hand to lift it to type that to you.

Hiroshi is being influenced by this new alter's problem – the heavy weight of a legalistic obedience to the law. Much that happens inside is symbolic, as is the case here . . .

elskon : Interesting, well here is a tray with a loaf of the Bread of Life, hyssop tea, and pitcher of the Water of Life. let us go in and eat and drink with her.

Grace : I will give to her but she is no longer that child with the smile of truth she has become known as Hannah ... a women of doctrine, and law... can you understand this?

elskon : Yes, but what the Law could not do, Jesus did on the cross.

I quote the appropriate verse :Rom 8:3 “For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh.”

Grace : ah, a powerful saying

I quote some more verses with a slight modification to fit Hannah's situation: Gal 3:1-3 “O foolish Hannah, who hath bewitched you, that ye should not obey the truth, before whose eyes Jesus Christ hath been evidently set forth, crucified among you? This only would I learn of you, Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith? Are ye so foolish? having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the flesh?

Grace : that gave a response that saying did... having begun one way and changing to the Law

Gal 3:5 “He therefore that ministereth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, doeth he it by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?”

Grace : Who might you be that you would come to my house and tell me of what I should believe? There must be law... rules... rituals... without them there is little purpose

elskon : There are rules but does that give one license to disobey the rules of God?

Grace : I disobey the rules of God? I cannot disobey the rules of anyone or anything here.

Three years ago, I wouldn't have had any idea what was troubling Hannah or how to help her; I might not have even noticed anything wrong. But today, she just doesn't “feel” right and I'm guessing she has darkones.

elskon : These rules: Eph 2:8 "For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast."

Grace : I have no ability to do anything outside of this room. I have only my mind and my reason I have no things and you do not need to shout at me.

elskon : LOL, I'm not shouting. Here is cup of hyssop tea, a gift to you, would you please drink with me?

Grace : you are so forceful. you shove these things at me and expect me to be respectful?

Ah, refusing a gift, an unthinkable breach of etiquette . . .

elskon : forceful? <smile> a not unusual complaint, but I am here to help you. As to who I am: I am a servant of God and His Son Jesus. I am in the army of God.

Grace : and your army comes to me? what have I done to you? I have only maintained order

elskon : I am not here with an army. I'm here by myself to help you.

Grace : you wish to take over? I am helpless to stop you. they stopped me long ago. I only occupy my room.

elskon : Well, you might have been wrong, so I am here to free you of the bondage to the law.

Grace : you wish to control my thoughts, the only thing I have left? You have changed the Japanese way

elskon : I am knocking the chains off you now.

Grace : there is comfort in those chains

My, my . . . no matter what I say or offer, I get a negative response. This is always a most difficult kind of alter to help.

elskon : well, you no longer have them, so please drink the Water of Life with me. You are now free to do so.

Grace : I am free to do so or do it OR ELSE?

elskon : Have I forced you to do anything yet?

Grace : no, you just come claiming you are part of some huge army just in case I don't

elskon : LOL, I am here to set you at liberty, not to put you in a different set of chains.

elskon : You wondered where my authority came from so I told you. But I am here by myself. Lord Jesus, please open her heart to see the truth.

Grace : Excuse. Eli? can we be starting this over? she is not fighting the idea she is fighting you

elskon : Yes Hiroshi, she may be. I will stand back and let you give her the Water of Life. (And under my breath, good luck)

Grace : well, let us see if this helps. Hannah? I have come with this man, I am sorry that I did not explain... perhaps you would like to know of things that have happened....

Grace : you can eat this bread, drink this water and have some tea. It is his Jesus that has become our Jesus and it is His way that is the answer

Grace : Hiroshi, I would like to speak with reason but I do not wish to be pushed into a corner.

Grace : Hannah, it is very harmful for us to argue, it is damaging to Grace

Grace : (whispering to eli) that is as nice as I can be.... if it doesn't work.... perhaps the sword?

elskon : (whispering to Hiroshi) You see, my friend, she is now finding a different excuse. Nobody is pushing her, she was offered food and drink which she is refusing, and a gift which she refused. That is very impolite, as you well know.

elskon : so Hiroshi, lets get out of this room and lock the door.

Grace : yes

elskon : Now I am drilling a hole (drilling)

Grace : she will wish she had eaten the bread and had the tea and water, huh?

elskon : It would have been easier <smile>

Grace : she is shrieking at you, what do you think you are doing why can't you leave me alone?

Sounds like she may be afraid of the water. Only darkones or alters with darkones in them are really afraid of the Water of life, so . . .

elskon : You have a hole, please wet her down.

Grace : oh doing this is happiness... her dignified self, with rigid lines

elskon : if she opens her mouth fill it with the Water of Life.

Grace : oh man this is fun... her perfect hair... her perfect make up her perfect clothes... her expensive shoes

Her beautiful attire, her nice shoes, her perfect makeup and her perfect hairdo . . . all symbols of an outward righteousness while inside she might be a can of worms.

elskon : <sigh> we tried to do it the easy way.

Grace : she is absolutely positively stricken with horror that such a thing could happen to her

elskon : I am now taking her clothes from her and burning them

Grace : I am loving this, sir... sorry, it is probably sinful

elskon : Yeah, It probably is, but still funny. Here is hyssop soap and a hot tub of living water.

Grace : the bath? ah a true weak spot for everyone here

elskon : yes, now she can stand there stark naked or jump into the bath. It's her call.

Grace : laughing too hard to watch....

elskon : Hiroshi, I think you have a mean streak <grin> but I figured you would see the humor.

Now all this may seem a bit overbearing and aggressive, and why don't we leave this poor alter alone? One has to keep the ultimate goal in sight: Hannah is just one rebellious alter in a system of many, and the goal is to help the whole system. If this alter was left to her own devices, the system would never be able to fully integrate.

Grace : I hope when she gets the bread it has an extra helping of humility... she is weakening... no where to run or hide. I love it...

bath or nothing... and you know how enticing a bath is to a

Japanese... especially a nice hot one

elskon : right, and if she doesn't jump in pretty soon, I may take that bath myself.

Grace : a sense of humor, funny

elskon : I am now asking God to please send the light of His truth into that room . . . Gen 1:3 "And God said, Let there be light: and there was light."

Grace : oh that did it....that light made her jump in

elskon : can she hear us talking?

Grace : I can't tell if she can hear us or if she just looks like that all the time.... sour puss

elskon : well, that hyssop tea is a bit sour and bitter. I will pour a cup into her right now.

Grace : she is glaring at you and me... and glaring in general

elskon : ok, then I'll pour another cup of tea into her

Grace : she is so rigid... the hot bath cannot even relax her stiff muscles... she has held that position for too long

Ah, a clue, from working with other systems with similar alters I know that an alter's rigidity is caused by darkones inside.

elskon : OK, she may have an evil spirit, a darkone . . . Here is the command . . . "In the name of Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh, all evil spirits you are commanded to come out of Hannah at once." Shoot when you see them come out!

Grace : she doesn't have just one... man... whoa

elskon : kill whatever comes out. Keep doing it until she looks totally normal.

Grace : need a grenade or something... oh man

elskon : ok, here . . . throw a grenade in, throw several

Grace : she is shrieking and they are all over the place

elskon : put your rifle on spray

Grace : man, I have to do it from the top down if I do it down low they jump up... she is covered by a shield or something it looks like now

Again from other systems, that shield is some sort of partially opaque spiritual barrier some darkones have to keep the Water of Life from touching them. Continuing to wet them down and commanding them to come out eventually breaks that barrier down.

elskon : Lord Jesus, please send a rain of the Water of Life on all the darkones.

Grace : she doesn't look so good oh man

elskon : keep wetting her down

Grace : it is better now because they can't get away and the water is making clean places but she looks a little pasty gray she is soft though... no more stiffness

elskon : if she is not normal color, she still has darkones, say it again and keep shooting until she looks completely normal . . .

elskon : "In the name of Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh, all evil spirits you are commanded to come out of Hannah at once."

Grace : it is different with her... stuff comes out of her pores not like her mouth or like that

elskon : that's ok, keep saying it and keep shooting. Here is more water for the rifle.

Grace : it doesn't stay gray in the water the water is clean

elskon : "In the name of Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh, all evil spirits you are commanded to come out of Hannah at once.'

Grace : it has stopped and she is a nice color

Above are just a few lines from several pages of text. Getting rid of Hannah's demons actually took about 30 minutes.

There will be alters just like Hannah who will read this book. I say to you: Stop being deceived. Your darkones claim they are your friends, but they are lying. Darkones have only evil intentions. If you are honest with yourself, you know you fear and distrust them, and for good reason. Instead of peace and light, they bring darkness, injury and death to everyone they control. If you remain as you are, those darkones will eventually destroy you!

But here is the good news: Your darkones can be destroyed and you can be set free. Look for the Shining Man with hurt hands and ask for His help. If you're not sure it's the real Shining Man, just ask him to declare "Jesus Christ is come in the flesh." If you run into a fake, throw water on him until he turns into a puddle of goo and find the real Shining Man. Jesus never says no to anyone who comes to Him with an honest heart.

elskon : So how does the room look? I could tell there was something wrong with her when we first came into the room, a kind of un-Japanese rudeness and combativeness.

Grace : Rudeness? that was generous of you

elskon : <smile>

Grace : the room looks good, but I don't understand it.... everything looks okay and she looks like she is sleeping in the tub... relaxed.....

Grace : I am sorry I butted in. I thought she would come around if she was forced to display honor

elskon : I know, but her darkones were fighting too hard against Jesus and demons have no honor.

Grace : you should see the comparison of that rigid, dignified, creature and the peaceful, sleeping one. I loved watching that scene of the dignity dripping away, but I almost feel like we are watching something sacred here in this sleeping one, that she should be left alone

elskon : Yes, we should not gloat and we really didn't do it, Jesus did. There but for the grace of God goes us.

Grace : I know we should not gloat and I will not mention it again, (but it sure was fun), now I can be done with it

elskon : Yes, she will be fine now. I am giving her a towel and a new kimono, a really nice silk one in white.

elskon : here also is a loaf of the Bread of Life and a pitcher of the Water of Life.

Grace : she doesn't look like she needs the extra humility now... she looks very docile

elskon : Yes, it was those demons making her act so rude. here is a mattress and pillow and a blanket, too.

Grace : the law is a difficult concept for some... the battle of tradition... ethics... honor

elskon : I know. I am also leaving her a Bible to read.

Grace : but Grace is coming very near

elskon : ok, but lock this door. I don't think Hannah should be running loose until we have a chance to talk to her again.

A switching pause . . .

Grace : eli?

elskon : yes, hello Grace. If you like, look inside.

Grace : it is beautiful, my tree for the first time in many years has blossoms

elskon : <smile>

Grace : and the house? everything is changing. Hiroshi stands very straight and tall. He is not a fat little Sumo wrestler anymore...

and there is more light everywhere and the door to come inside is not so heavy and the walls are not so thick

elskon : all the other doors have been opened now. U**** caller was a demon and she is gone now. Ann and Rose are now one.

elskon : Remember at first when you were afraid to talk to me? <smile> Much has changed.

Grace : I have forgotten, but yes...and at first I typed so slow..... now I can hardly wait to talk.... almost rude

elskon : lol, I don't mind

Grace : It is only afternoon and I am as sleepy as if it were 2 in the morning but it is a peaceful sleepy

Some merges take days to complete and then the new person needs a lot of rest. Grace's merges take place in a couple of hours, but a rest of several days is still needed after each merge. Hiroshi was an

exception. All his merges took place in just a few minutes and no rest was needed. Hiroshi is a bit strange, he is so unlike every other alter in the system that I sometimes wonder if he is part of them.

elskon : ok, so go rest.

Grace : bye, papa san

elskon : <grin>

Over the next few days we do a little housekeeping with Grace. She has stopped drinking and frequenting the bars, but she is still haunted by the secret she is keeping from Akira. Maybe some women could put a multiple rape behind them (horrible as it is) and get on with their lives, but Grace can't. To her it's a matter of honor. Right now she has enough problems just keeping her home running without having to worry about the stability of her marriage so I decide not to address that issue until after she merges with Juniper.

Hiroshi and I look in on Juniper who is always sitting at her little desk reading her Bible. She must have taken the children's gifts into her heart, as Jesus commanded, because they are no longer on the shelf where she placed them. The newly merged Roseann visits the children regularly, feeding them and loving them.

The house has changed a lot. Most of the rooms are gone and part of the wall is missing. You can now see outside where there are meadows and trees and a blue sky full of puffy little clouds. There aren't any darkones around and the system is at peace inside.

12 FOUND ANGEL

elskon : Why hello, Juniper

Grace : uh.....by the way....I am liking you better now....I can't say "hello to the one I don't like very much" anymore.

Grace : I am sorry that I yelled the thing about "do you know who I am." it was mean and rude but I felt very important.

elskon : <grin> Worry not, that is long past and forgotten

Grace : so will you spend time with me? it is selfish but I was important.

elskon : If you like, and you are still important.

Grace : I see Grace now as weak and timid and needy.

elskon : Well, she is weaker and more timid than you, that is true, but you are both important to the system. All of you are needed if final merging is to come.

Grace : don't think this too proud of me but what if.....well, what if I tell you that I was here before her, what then?

As I suspected all along. Juniper is probably part of the birth-child. And she is right; all alters do not have the same capabilities. Grace has all this system's feelings and emotions, but she isn't very stable and rather ineffectual.¹ On the other hand, Juniper may be somewhat unfeeling, but she is organized and well motivated.

elskon : I already considered that possibility and it may be true.

Grace : so even if I was first it doesn't matter

elskon : You are all part of this system so all must be humble towards each other.

Grace : even if I was stronger?

elskon : That's not so important now, you are all in this together.

Grace : will you answer a question of me in truth?

elskon : I make mistakes, but always try to answer truthfully.

¹ I learned from other chats (not recorded here) that Grace came into the system at the age of 12 as the result of repeated sexual molestations by a neighbor. Thinking Grace to be a "devil child" anyway, the mother not only didn't object, but saw her daughter as a profit center, as a commodity that could be rented out to that man.

Grace : please only answer yes or no and do not worry about the answer, but I would like to know... do you see me as a cold person?

Though meeting the Shining Man and being bathed in the Water of Life changed her greatly, Juniper still has the same personality inventory. She is intelligent, has good organizational skills and a lot of drive, but she's still rather emotionless.

elskon : I do not see you as an emotional person. That is why you need Grace, she has the emotions for you all.

Grace : you have stated well, but I think at times there is nothing inside of me. it is not dark inside, just very empty

elskon : That is why you need Grace . . . in fact, you need each other. Can you see Grace now?

Grace : yes

elskon : OK, I am going to ask you to do a strange thing, but please trust me. Lets walk up to Grace, I will go with you.

Grace : ok

elskon : Now look into her eyes and tell me what you see.

Grace : kindness, softness

elskon : yes, and?

Grace : and um... I see a reflection of me, like she is really seeing me...looking at me and caring for me

elskon : She has all the emotions you lack so please take both her hands.

Grace : take her hands?

elskon : Yes please.

Grace : she isn't offering them to me

elskon : so reach for them.

Grace : ah... When I reach for them then she gives and her hands are warm

elskon : keep looking in her eyes.

Grace : well, just a minute... she is touching my face. She has my face in her hands and is whispering something to me... we need to be strong together and she is weak... we need to work together

elskon : yes, that is true.

Grace : and she has a great sad thing that is going to happen but she does not know what it is so she has to be strong... something that Hiroshi knows... and maybe you know but you have not shared

elskon : I believe I know, but it is not sad. Please tell her so.

Grace : "It is not sad, Grace"

Grace knows she is about to merge and is afraid she will lose her identity, which is true in a way. I carefully explain to Grace that she really needs to be with Juniper to become part of a whole new person who will be neither Grace nor Juniper, but a combination of both.

Unfortunately, some "hosts" want to keep their dominant position regardless of the needs of the rest of their system. I remember two systems in which that very thing happened. Both hosts refused give up control and merge. Instead they seized control of their systems and locked their cores away. I hear about those two systems occasionally; they remain as haunted as ever, struggling multiples to this day.

elskon : I think it is time for you to be with Grace and maybe I should speak with Hiroshi, if that is alright. Please switch slowly.

Grace : ok

I know they will be fully absorbed in the merge shortly and will not be able to talk anyway. A switching pause and now Hiroshi . . .

Grace : Juniper doesn't leave so easy even in slow time

elskon : Hello Hiroshi. I suspect they are merging.

Grace : I believe they will but I have a knowledge of something

elskon : please share it if you wish

Grace : I wish to, but it is heavy for me I am hoping it will be at least a little difficult for you and we can share this together

elskon : Please say on, my friend.

Grace : I am thinking there will be an end of my duties here.

elskon : That is up to Jesus, have you asked Him about it?

Grace : I am afraid to ask, but I have listened carefully and He has talked about a time of going into the Landscape.

elskon : There are battles to be won out there, too, you know.

Grace : Is it another world?

elskon : It is the same world, but outside the house, beyond the walls.

Grace : it is not the end?

elskon : no <smile>

Grace : I have felt any progress toward the outside made the end that much closer... a time of leaving Grace and you my friend

elskon : I don't believe that to be so.

Grace : ah, I am so sorry for complaining..... Samurai are not to be faint of heart.....

elskon : When we are in Jesus' army, all battles are for the good of everyone and that includes you!

Grace : I know, but I could not hide my sadness from Grace and I think she thinks something terrible is going to happen.

elskon : I think her sadness is related to her merging with Juniper. She will not be the same ever again. In fact, you have probably seen her for the last time.

Hiroshi loves Grace and has defended her all her life. Now he is losing her and he is feeling the loss keenly. So am I. A system gains strength when its alters merge, but I lose a lot of dear friends.

Grace : this is such a strange place anymore

Grace : oh I wish to ask something... It is from observation and curiosity but am I of a different substance than the others

Grace : you will probably see right through me once again.... but I am not going to merge with them am I?

elskon : <smile> I have wondered about that myself. In all honesty, I don't believe you are to merge with them. I think you will always be a defending Samurai.

By this time I have concluded that Hiroshi is actually a guardian angel who has been in this system from its infancy. It seems Hiroshi doesn't know it, and won't until Jesus reveals it to him. This isn't new; other systems have guardian angels in disguise, their true nature unrevealed until the system merges.

Grace : I see that Juniper was surprising honest in her dealings with you this evening

elskon : Yes, but there was no reason to lie. Tell me, how are they doing?

Grace : well not for me to understand.... they do this touching and feeling things and whispering.... is this a woman thing too?

elskon : I think it is more a merging thing. Is one melting into the other?

Grace : they are very close

elskon : They need to become like each other.

Grace : well it could be faster, sigh... it has to be tonight because someone has to be out and they aren't going to go out like that

elskon : Hummm, I suppose not.

184 *The Shining Man*

Grace : can they get separated?

elskon : Yes they can, but I don't want it to happen unless Jesus commands it.

Merges do fall apart all the time, usually because the alters are not totally compatible. It would have been a disaster if we had tried to merge Juniper with Grace before both came to the Lord.

Grace : He is near... Honorable Jesus, asking you for wisdom in what is to be done for Grace and Juniper. is there something that we can do to serve humbly accepting your will for us...

Grace : you wish to know what He says?

elskon : If you wish

Grace : Jesus says, "Juniper has chosen well, she has faith, she has also gained trust in you because you answered her truthfully, Grace : "any other answer you would have given she would have known to be evasive or untruthful she has shared her emptiness

Grace : "and it was an emptiness that could be filled no other way. Now Grace will be able to have the strength to bear"

Grace : I am not understanding this

Grace : "Grace is stronger and Juniper is softer and they are close but fragility exists"

Grace : fragility is that a word?

elskon : I think so and understand it

Grace : (so who is this to be?) I am asking you eli

elskon : Do you mean, who will they be after the merge?

Grace : yes

elskon : Ask Jesus please. He may have a name for them already.

Grace : Janice, a combination of both names.

elskon : If that is the name Jesus chose for her, then Janice she shall be.

Grace : I can hardly watch them but Jesus says it is beautiful.. they speak to each other not even in words now

elskon : yes?

Grace : one makes a sound and the other makes a sound like they are still explaining.. Jesus says it is beyond words it is feelings that they are giving

Grace : just as I think I shall look no more, I cannot pull my eyes away but Jesus says to take a last look at them.. does not make sense

elskon : I think what Jesus is saying that this is the last time it will be "them," after this they will be only one.

Grace : I am looking and they are so close and they look light and now there is light and there is a lot of light around them... I cannot see them but I am looking at them

Grace : I see Light

elskon : Yes, Jesus is doing this.

Seeing a brilliant light during a merge is a common phenomenon in Christian multiples. A merge with light takes only a few minutes. Other types of merges can take two or three weeks. A slow merge happens because the alters are not enough alike or they are merging too soon. Those merges are very fragile and usually fall apart.

Grace : I am glad, because it was too much for me too see

Grace : and He speaks to them... are you sure this is how this is to be? what I see is amazing... you have seen this before?

elskon : many times

Grace : Grace is now the size of Juniper.. the beauty of Grace but the back of Juniper.. the voice of Grace (thank goodness)

elskon : Your first look at Janice

Grace : and He speaks to me but this I can understand:

"Presenting Janice, most honored and obedient child."

elskon : <smile>

Grace : she blushes like Grace but wrinkles her face like Juniper

elskon : <grin>

A long switching pause . . .

Grace : honored Sir?

elskon : Hello Janice, let me be the first to greet you. <smile>

Grace : I have knowledge of you in my spirit mind, you are a helper of those in need.

elskon : I have been your friend a long time.

Grace : Yes, I know you.... I am a new person

elskon : I know you are, if you look, you will see you have memories of me, but please do not hurry to find them, they will come gradually.

Grace : I do have memories of you. I am a new person, but really just a returning of the old with newness.

Grace : Is this strange to you?

elskon : no, I have seen this many times.

Grace : You will think this speech odd, but I must tell it. It comes from within. I will be more relaxed when the braiding is finished.

elskon : No, I won't think it odd. say what you wish

Grace : the braiding or drawing together that has taken place has been long in coming but is firm

elskon : Yes?

Grace : I am honored that you came to the unfortunate Grace

elskon : I actually came to help you all.

Grace : there is a brightness for us all now and I thank you for letting me speak with my spiritual mind and I can be released to speak in understanding now

elskon : ok, I am glad to accept your speech.

Grace : smiling and acknowledging your acceptance

Grace : hello, eli

elskon : Hi girl <smile>

Grace : it is we/me

elskon : yup, I know

I have seen over a hundred merges, but none that went together as smoothly as this one. An hour, start to finish. However, all new merges are fragile so she will need several stress free days to rest and to get to know herself.

Grace : I think I have an echo for now

Grace : I can say Hi and hear a hi... I can say I am strong and have an echo that says I am loving

elskon : Yes, it will be a bit confusing for a while.

Grace : what am I to do?

elskon : You can go about your life with a new strength and vigor but also with a loving heart.

Grace : Well, this saying is very unlike me but.... this is way cool

elskon : I know, and I am grinning from ear to ear.

Grace : and you know what Jesus said to me/we? In a special way He tells me/us that there is a time and place for everything and if I/we listen it will be easy but if I/we stop to try to guess or just do it, it may not be the right time or season.

Grace : I need to rest... not to force to think but allow

elskon : That is true, it will be a few days before the confusion goes away. You are going to have to be careful to act like you used to with the family for a while.

elskon : It might be a bit difficult for you, but you don't want to seem different to them, even though you are.

elskon : You will need to let them see the changes gradually. That way everyone will stay happy.

Grace : oh ok, you know this to be true? it is better to be this way?

elskon : Yes, it is better, otherwise they might think something is wrong.

Grace : ah yes. Akira would think I am being happy like when I was hiding the unmentionable and he might think I am doing that again.

elskon : just act with them like you did last week and let them see the changes gradually.

Grace : I am very fine

elskon : tonight was a very major step

Grace : good night, papa san. I am very happy

elskon : <smile> goodnight.

The next time we meet the new Janice is out . . .

Grace : I see Hiroshi always walking around with an inside grin that is almost to come out...like the cat who ate the canary.

elskon : Do you realize that you are now better than you have ever been in your life??? Something like that is hard to hide.

Grace : yes and I really want to tell you how that is, but I don't know the words

elskon : So tell me this, are you getting used to being Janice rather than Juniper and Grace?

Grace : You call me Janice?

elskon : Yes, and why not? That is who you are now.

Grace : you have seen these things happen before... what has happened to me?

elskon : many times. One person I worked with had over 350 people inside. The names of the alters are different and the landscapes are different, but the basic principles remain.

Despite individual differences, multiples are structurally much alike: A dark side, a light side, darkones, shining ones, landscapes with houses, others without, some with fountains, others brooks. The methods that work in one usually work in all. The scripture verses that are effective in one are effective in all. The Shining Man is the same to all so the road to full integration is the same for all.

Grace : I feel very sensitive and I am afraid of hurt. Why is it I fear to go too far outside of myself? I want to stay only near my family and my inner self.

elskon : Well, sticking close to family at this time is wise. It will take several days to several weeks for you to be comfortable in your new person and to be fully merged. Until then, you will be fragile.

Grace : I think that is the word I was trying to find, fragile, like a dainty flower. I just know that if something unmentionable happened now I would die

elskon : so be careful . . . no stress that isn't absolutely necessary. This is your life's health we are talking about.

Grace : well, I know that my husband wants me to go out with him this evening and I want to tell him I am not feeling well but I don't want to lie.

elskon : It isn't a lie. Your fragility is real.

Grace : that is good, Hiroshi smiles... ok, he is here

elskon : ok, please switch slowly and I will talk to you later.

Switching pause and Hiroshi comes out. He sounds as happy as if he won the lottery . . . During our next several talks, Hiroshi and I go outside the house and explore. There are rolling hills and grass meadows and a dark valley full of screaming things. Beyond it is a most beautiful garden with a large flowing fountain. Jesus is there with many angels.

Grace : We have reached the place of Jesus and He is here

Grace : It is green and on this hill and the other there are like shapes but the shapes are the shapes of angels

elskon : Please ask the angels to say, "Jesus Christ is come in the flesh."

Grace : they have said so but one speaks to me as a person

elskon : Yes? What did he say? Did the person who speaks say, "Jesus Christ is come in the flesh"?

Grace : yes... and he greets me as Hiroshi. he says his name is Jethro, the Gatekeeper. He says to come with understanding and with an open heart.

Hummm, Jethro the Gatekeeper. I guess that puts to rest the idea that St. Peter holds that office. We know a whole lot less about the spiritual world than we think. We read in 2 Corinthians 12:2 that the

spiritual world (heaven) has at least three levels, three different dimensions if you prefer. Alters and demons are probably allowed in the first level only.

elskon : Are you sure he said "Jesus Christ IS come in the flesh" exactly? I do not wish to be fooled by a dark angel.

Grace : He spoke it thus "Jesus Christ is come in the flesh" and they have moved to the side making an opening for us to stand in on the top of the hill, but he stands with us.

elskon : ok

Grace : it is like coming to a city in the night, only it is day and the light shines around it like a mist of blue fog.

This blue fog is present in other multiples when Jesus is there and a major merge was about to take place.

elskon : So ask Jesus for understanding

Grace : Jesus give to me, please, the understanding for what I am to do

Grace : Oh, I am taken back for what I see... The mist is clearer and below is a garden and there is a fountain and water but there is not house or tea room here.

Grace : you know what this place is?????

elskon : Yes, this is where all of you will come to live.

Grace : you understand this????? We have traveled to the beginning... back to the beginning... we are in the beginning

Grace : we have traveled forward to the beginning????

elskon : In a way, yes. Jesus is restoring this system to how it is supposed to be . . . how it was when he first gave it life.

elskon : Now please ask Jesus if we are to go back to the house and lead the rest here.

Grace : where the house and gardens were it is cleared... there is no house now.

elskon : I told you the house would soon be gone.

elskon : I think we are to go back to where the house was and bring everyone here, or ask Jesus if He wills to send His angels for them.

Grace : they are here... and the angels have carried them, Eli, sir, this is a most beautiful place.

Grace : I am not joined with them so what is it that I am?

elskon : look at your reflection in the water and tell me

Grace : do you know?

elskon : I think so, but you tell me.

Grace : I am looking like part Jethro and part Hiroshi... like a Samurai angel

elskon : I saw that as a possibility, but I didn't want to influence you by saying so.

So Hiroshi really is Grace's guardian angel, and has been since her infancy. This was nearly the last time I talked with Hiroshi. He soon withdrew from all the alters and stood on a hill some distance from them, shining, wings glowing, a smile on his face. I feared talking to him after this because the Bible warns against mediumism.

I talk to people when they come out, but if I spoke to Hiroshi through Grace, I would be using Grace as a medium. While we are on the subject, never ask alters to ask Jesus or His angels any questions that might concern you personally. That is what Saul did when he went to the Witch of Endor. He used that witch as a medium to call up Samuel's spirit and it got him killed (I Sam 28:7-19).

Grace : I say to Jethro, what am I? he says I have been a guide .. I have been to them what they have needed to see

Grace : Jesus is speaking and all around on the hill the angels have knelt and all are quiet... this is a "going back to beginning" it is a time of rebirthing .. it is an honored day to remember for all time .. this time and this place .. a place of honor

Grace : and here we all are and He is gone and the angels are not there but it is a sparkle that has come

elskon : and by this fountain you are to stay

Grace : and where Jethro was once standing is the place where Janice is. she appears happy but faint.

Switching pause . . .

Grace : My papa san, this is much for me. I saw it all and the angels came they carried us over the valley of the unmentionable... In that valley is where the screams and is everything bad

elskon : but now you are at the fountain so rest for a while. The water is warm.

13 PEACE AT LAST

We only have Janice, Roseann, Hanna and the three children with us now and all are at the new fountain. Originally there were 12 rooms, but now there are only six alters and that soon changes. Within a few days, Roseann merges with Hanna. A few more days pass and the new Rosanah merges with Janice. The three children, Juni Nip and Per, then dance around each other holding hands. They move towards each other and merge into one very small child. After that, there is only Janice and this one little child. There are no other alters, and no conflicts. Jesus is there and several angels.

Grace : there is so much change here and what of Hiroshi?

elskon : Does he have wings now?

Grace : yes, he is an angel

elskon : I thought he might be.

Grace : what to do with this knowledge? is it a knowledge to be kept within?

elskon : All bad memories (if you still have any) are to be handed to Jesus. He will put them in your memory box where you can see them if needed. You have the key, but they cannot hurt you there.

Grace : It is not wise to tell anyone on the outside of these things is it? Their understanding is limited

elskon : Their understanding is almost nonexistent. And no, it is not wise to share what you now know, though later on, Jesus may lead you to tell Akira.

Janice eventually worked up the courage to tell her husband about the unmentionable things that happened to her at that rest stop. Akira was angry for some time, not at his beloved wife, but at the despicable men who attacked her. He reported the offense to the police, but he was too late. It seems this was not the first nor the last crime those despicable men had committed, including homicide. They were already convicted of said homicides and were now making licence plates, probably for the rest of their unnatural lives.

elskon : I see you are sad, do you want to tell me about it?

Grace : It is not your fault

elskon : Well, it could be. I'm not infallible you know. <smile>

Grace : no, I am sad because of Akira. He has become withdrawn

elskon :. As I told you before, time heals. This whole thing has been a terrible blow to him.

Grace : it scares me

elskon : You have to look at what has happened to Akira in a rational way. He does not feel good about himself right now because he failed to protect you.

Grace : there is something else I need to tell you

elskon : Yes?

Grace : Last night I was so upset I went to the little place by the bay window that looks outside and I talked to Jesus and the child

elskon : Yes?

Grace : and I talk to the child just like it was my child and I put my face near her, my cheek on her cheek

elskon : Of course, that child is part of you – the child is the three children together.

Grace : and the child moved this time and put her hand on my ear and touched me.

elskon : That is very good. I think it may be time for you to hug the child and look into her eyes. Why not try it?

Grace : the child does not have open eyes.

elskon : Well, ask her to open her eyes and then look into them.

Grace : She is not an ordinary child... she gives me pictures

elskon : Those pictures are probably of your past.

Grace : yes. I am with her now

The "I am with her" tells you she may be starting to merge already. Though I continue to interact with Janice to encourage her, from this point on I'm really just a bystander.

elskon : Maybe she has more pictures to give you. The only way to tell is to hug her and look into her eyes. When she has given you all her pictures then you can merge with her.

Grace : I reach down to her and put my cheek on her cheek and it is different

Grace : I am not in her eyes but the picture is ME

elskon : Pick her up and hold her. Hold her close.

Grace : I cannot speak

Grace : I will tell you what I am thinking but it may not make any sense to you

elskon : well try

Grace : This child....she is being born in me.... it is just what I am thinking ... I don't know how to tell you what I am thinking

elskon : Smile, but I understand it.

Grace : I am being born in myself

It is difficult to describe what is happening here, but Janice starts feeling the birth-child in the center of her torso, then the birth-child begins to stretch out until it merges into her whole body, then into her arms and legs, all the way to the tips of her fingers and toes.

elskon : Yes, it is a different way of expressing what usually happens when the birth-child merges, but I understand it.

Grace : It is a total feeling

elskon : I understand that, the child is stretching out inside you.

Is that not correct?

Grace : it is an overtaking feeling and total weakness at first, but it has the feeling of the child self

Grace : I try to slow it

elskon : Please don't slow it. The sooner this is finished the sooner you will be of one mind the way Jesus created you in the first place.

Grace : and when it first happens I couldn't think or see for a little

elskon : I know. You will have difficulty thinking or seeing out for a little while. That is normal.

Grace : right now I am happy

elskon : This is the most important thing that will ever happen in your whole life.

Grace : this child? this is me?

elskon : Yes, if you think it is not so, ask Jesus. You are now a whole person for the first time since you were very little. What can be more important than that?

Grace : how can a baby exchange? (*i.e., split*) You are saying this little child exchanged? that I was multiple while I was baby?

elskon : Yes, unless I misunderstand what happened, your first abuse happened while you were a baby, and you split back then.

elskon : You are now merging with that birth-child. You can ask Jesus if what I think is not correct.

Grace : He says it is correct.

Grace : it is a feeling like no other joining... and Jesus says it is very much important as you say.

elskon : There are no other alters left inside now are there? Just Hiroshi and Jesus.

Grace : yes, and Jesus says they are not leaving us

elskon : That is wonderful. I am glad they will stay with you.

Grace : things look so different now

elskon : What are you telling me?

Grace : I can feel. I can feel what I touch

Grace : my touch is sensitive. I can feel the bumps on the table, the wood grain

Grace : the keyboard feels different. I can feel smooth and rough

Grace : I can see different. Before I can see what I stare at good, but other things be blurred. now I have a bigger field of vision.

elskon : Yes that is called peripheral vision

As mentioned earlier, though they are usually unaware of it, most multiples have reduced peripheral vision and sense of touch. Those deficiencies are corrected when they fully merge.

Grace : and this is not so wrong to you? That it is different?

elskon : No, it is right.

Grace : ok, blushing for being so open. I have a question for you

Grace : Now you have helped me to do what you had to for me, are you going to leave me?

elskon : No, I will always be your papa san. <smile>

Grace : thank you because I need a papa san

elskon : You will continue to grow, but all the major corrections have now been made.

Grace : I have some memories that I did not have before, and some are gone

Grace : I cannot remember much about the unmentionable now

elskon : It is because those memories are in the memory box.

You could get them back if you needed them, but they are safe there and won't hurt you.

Grace : I know, and Grace wasn't just drinking too much she was becoming very "loose" like nothing mattered.

elskon : I was afraid that might be happening. You were very close to disaster.

Grace : I do not know why we came to your Bible School room. I am like a little baby starting over today

elskon : Yes

Grace : I am very happy. I just feel everything is and will be okay now.

elskon : Yes it will. Bye for now

Grace : bye

And that's the way it ended. Grace was now a monomind and she happily went back to her family full time. Oh, she kept in touch until Akira got over being upset and a for few weeks after, but who keeps in touch with their doctor when they don't need him anymore?

DIEDRE

Remember Diedre of Chapter One? The woman who had malignant hypertension, had been in therapy for seven years and was supposed to die? Well, I worked with her for three years, eventually to a final merge . . . and another final merge . . . and another final merge . . . one after another, but that final merge kept breaking apart.

I had no idea what to do until I remembered something she told me a couple of years earlier. Three year old Diedre believed her father had murdered her brother and sister (the children had actually died in an accidental cave-in of a drainage ditch their father was digging). But this now middle-aged woman still clung to the fiction that her father was a murderer. It occurred to me that she was still trapped by the faulty memory of a three year old. That unforgiveness and hatred of her father might be keeping her a multiple . . .

elskon : I remember you hated your father for killing your brother and sister. Well, how old were you when your brother and sister died in that cave in?

Diedre : Three

elskon : and didn't the cops say it as an accident?

Diedre : Yes

elskon : And didn't your mother tell you many times that it was an accident?

Diedre : Yes she did

elskon : And your mother remained with your father after that accident happened, right?

Diedre : yes

elskon : Well let me ask you a question: Is your mother a good woman?

Diedre : O, she is a very good woman.

elskon : So is it possible for a really good woman to lie about what happened to your brother and sister and stay with a man who murdered two of her beloved children?

Diedre : I don't think so.

elskon : You are a kindergarten teacher, right?

Diedre : Yes

elskon : Ok, so you know how kids think, don't you? You know they don't always see things the way we do.

Diedre : That is true.

Elskon : So let me ask you this: If someone younger than your kindergarten kids said her father had murdered her brother and sister, would you believe her?

Diedre : I'm not sure they would understand the concept.

elskon : Right, so don't you see . . . here you are 55 years of age, and you have lived a life of hatred towards your father based on the faulty perception of a three year old?

Diedre : O my, I never saw it that way before.

elskon : You have been hating your father for something he never did and hating your mother for staying with him after the accident happened . . . all based on the faulty perception of a three year old.

elskon : Not only are you hating him for something he didn't do, but since he died several years ago, you are still hating someone who isn't even here anymore.

elskon : Not only that, you are hating your mother for staying with a man who must have suffered for the rest of his life because of what happened to his children.

elskon : They both loved those children, you know. You have lost a son, remember how much that hurt? Do you think your parents suffered any less after losing two?

Diedre : crying

elskon ; It's ok, girl. This is an easy fix. I want you to go into your bedroom, close the door and set a chair in front of you.

Diedre : still crying

elskon : I know, but do it anyway.

elskon : Then I want you to sit your father in front of you and tell him how sorry you are for hating him like you did. Tell him you didn't understand and tell him that you really love him.

elskon : Tell him you forgive him and ask him to forgive you.

Diedre : But I am talking to you, you want me to do that right now?

elskon : yes, right now! Go off-line this instant and do it.

Diedre went off-line, but she contacted me the next day . . .

Diedre : Elskon, you are not going to believe this, but Tetra is gone. I didn't feel a merge or anything, but she is gone anyway. There is nobody inside but Jesus.

elskon : Praise the Lord

Diedre : He told me we were one now, but also warned me if I ever broke apart again I would be in the worst condition ever.

elskon : Ok, now I want you to go see your mother. Hug her and tell her you love her.

Diedre : That's very hard. I haven't touched my mother in years. I am not a touching person.

elskon : I know, but your mother is very old and you won't have her very long. She knows you have hated her all your life, even though you had no reason to.

elskon : If you don't do it and your mother dies, for the rest of your life you will regret not being kind to her and restoring your relationship with her.

Considering Diedre's malignant hypertension and other maladies, she should have died three years ago (or so her doctors said), but the Shining Man had other plans. A few days later a phone call . . .

Diedre : I did it, and I have never seen my little mother so happy. We are even going on vacation together.

elskon : That's great, and I don't care if you get the hives, leprosy, or bubonic plague, I want you to make this the best vacation your mother has ever had in her life. This is for her, you know.

Diedre : I don't know what to say, but I'm really happy.

So Diedre took her mother on vacation and it turned out to be the happiest time either of them ever had in their lives. She didn't go back to the things Jesus warned her against so she's just fine and remains a monomind to this day. I wanted her input on this book, so I sent her a draft. She replied with the following . . .

Dear Elskon,

Your manuscript was hard for me to read because it reminded me of how I used to be and of many troubles best forgotten. What you have written is true. About me, yes, but it is also true of many other multiples I have known. Some of them are no longer alive and I came very close to joining them.

Chaos used to be our comfort zone. The more chaos there was the less we had to face the reality we were running away from. Holding down our good position with the State was the only thing that gave us value, but the alter who was able to do that job was so hyper she was actually killing us. We checked into the hospital for what we intended to be our final time. We had put together a fool-proof drug mixture we knew would assure our swift end.

But before we went, we surfed the net to say goodbye to our friends and accidentally stumbled into *Lighthouse*. You, Elskon (though you didn't know us), made us promise to see you when our hospital stay was over. That was not our intention, but we remembered our promise and kept it.

Coming back to *Lighthouse* was no accident. We could not believe the light when it was sent into our system for the first time. I remember when Tetra came to touch that light with her finger. I remember the look of total disbelief and wonder on her face. The light was so powerful, it outweighed our need to end our life. That little light grew until it permeated our dark world.

The baby alter the doctors declared dead was proven to be alive. The darkones were exposed as the demons they were. The pain and chaos were reduced and eventually ended, for the first time in our lives. Freedom came slowly, but it did come.

At first we only knew Jesus as a *Shining Man* who walked in the forest sunbeams, but after meeting Him, peace became our friend. Dark places with hidden or wounded alters were opened and child alters were healed. Light then began to shine on every personality in our system.

It did take some time, but eventually "We" were no longer "we." We became ME and I am FREE.

Then my life went through unbelievably dramatic changes. This new awareness reminds me of the first time I put on glasses and could see there were leaves on the trees. People became more defined, like I was seeing them for the first time.

Mirrors are often the enemy of multiples, but now I could look at ME and get to know myself! Sensory perception became more vivid. I can remember touching my arm and thinking . . . I am really feeling me for the first time! I remember saying, "I am touching myself and myself is touching me back!"

Integration may have brought us together, but my growth did not stop there. The anger and hatred for my abusers were still major stumbling blocks to my complete freedom. It kept

breaking me apart and linking me to the past. Worst of all was the haunting fear that I might go back to being like I was.

Giving up that anger and hatred brought the real freedom and unity I had been seeking. The process involved emotions that were foreign and difficult for me. The feelings were so strong my body reacted like I was having a seizure. It was scary at first, but the peace that replaced my fear is indescribable. It is a peace that passes all understanding.

From that day to this, I remain integrated and at peace.

Diedre

Once in a while she hops a plane to visit us, though most of the other multiples we knew don't seem get around to it. One of our new monomind friends made other plans . . .

Hey Elskon;

I'm getting married and going on my honeymoon. I'll never get around to writing the letter you wanted before the book is finished. Am I in it?

Love ya;

Robin

Yes you're in it, and I hope you like what was written about your system. Others of our friends don't remember they were once multiple. Some don't even remember they were once fighting for their very lives. They don't even remember being touched by the Shining Man. I used to feel a little sad about all this being forgotten so soon, but not anymore. If the Lord wanted the multis to remember, they would. The bottom line is this: For many, their mind-numbing medications are history and so are those ineffectual exorcisms. Some supposed incurables are now living happy and productive lives and that's the way it should be. What more could anyone ask?

14

LOOKING BACK

With four years and thousands of hours dedicated to the multiples, there are at least a zillion interesting chats that had to be left out. Either that, or this book would have been the size of an unabridged dictionary. Some happenings were even stranger than what you have read so far. Here are three examples.

Gloria's system had 350 alters. What those alters were doing in Gloria's system is a mystery, I never met 300+ of them; they were never named and they never merged. I'm not even sure they were alters. Whatever they were, Gloria had a dynamite defender named Marsella who spent weeks training those unnamed ones as defenders. After training, Jesus took 300+ of them out of her system in troops of fifty. Shortly after that, Gloria merged with her remaining alters and became a monomind. I thought that was the end of it, but not so.

Several months later, a totally different system, the Kara system, got into serious trouble. Kara and her defenders had been badly injured in a tough battle with a darkone army and now their system was under attack again by even more darkones. But this time, little Sissy was the only healthy alter left to defend . . .

Kara : The sky is getting awful dark. I'm alone and I'm scared.

Elskon : Where are Kara and the rest?

Kara : don't know, they were hurt bad

elskon : Mercy! Tell you what, Sissy, you better ask Jesus for help RIGHT NOW! He hasn't brought your system this far just to let it fall tonight.

Kara : k, Im asking

Kara : He says He is sending help.

A minute passes . . .

Kara : I see lots of people coming. marching like in the army.

elskon : Great, how many are they?

Kara : don't know, lots.

Kara : The big man in armor says he is the Sargent and they were sent to defend us.

elskon : Really? How many men does he have?

Kara : he says 50. they were on their way to help someone else, but Jesus sent them here first.

Fifty men? I get a chill . . .

elskon : Please ask what system they came from originally.

Kara : he says from the system of Gloria.

Those two systems either set up that fanciful scenario to delude me or the above actually happened. I know both systems very well. Both are Christians, both are now monominds, and I have never known either to lie. So strange as it may sound, it happened.

Later I was chatting with an unnamed alter sitting off by herself in Lorrie's system. The alter was asking about the Shining Man so I talked to her about Jesus for almost an hour.

Elskon : Well, now that you know all this and have accepted Jesus as Lord, don't you think it's time we go to the fountain and meet the rest of your alters?

Dolly : O no, I don't belong here. I just came to learn about the Shining Man. I have to go back to my own system now.

I never saw her again and have no idea what system she came from, except that she wasn't one of our regulars.

There is a third strange story about a hidden alter. This particular multiple was an SRA victim (she's now a Christian and a monomind). A few months before her final merge, a very experienced defender told me they found a terribly hurt child alter in a cave, but were afraid to bring her to the fountain for fear that her horrific memories could destroy the core.

Elskon : ok, let's leave her right where she is and teach her how to hand those bad memories directly to Jesus.

Lizabeth : Don't think we can leave her alone. Too many darks around and we don't have any spare defenders.

Elskon : ok, lets ask Jesus what to do.

Lizabeth : He says He is sending help.

Elskon : Ok

A minute passes, and then . . .

Lizabeth : Two men coming.

Elskon : Men, not angels?

Lizabeth : Yes, and they are armed like us.

202 *The Shining Man*

Elskon : Hummm, ask them to declare, "Jesus Christ is come in the flesh."

Lizabeth : They do.

Elskon : ok, ask where they are from.

Lizabeth : They say they are from the system of Lydia in Boulder, Colorado. They say they can stay to help for a while.

Lizabeth's system is in North Carolina, and Lydia's is in Colorado, so it appears that distances mean little in the spiritual world. Multiples also say that time is very different there. Since we, too, might be spending time in a spiritual world when the Lord returns, maybe we should look at one possible future through two supposedly minor verses in Scripture:

Rev 10:6 ". . . there should be time no longer."

After Jesus returns, we may not be living in a "timed" cosmos, but in a timeless eternity . . . in a universe where time itself, as a natural phenomenon, no longer exists. Though the natural universe may remain, our future home may be in a timeless spiritual world. If so, and we're in our new glorified bodies, we may also be able to go in and out of that world at will, just like Jesus and His angels do. But that's not the end of the story . . .

John 14:2 "In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you."

Popular as the creed may be, Jesus isn't up in heaven building a lot of mansions for His people. Read the above verse more carefully: "In my Father's house ARE many mansions." Those mansions are already there! Jesus didn't say He was going to heaven to prepare a place for us. His going to the Cross is what prepared a place for us. Without the Cross we could never enter into His world.

So where are those many mansions? Step outside and look at the night sky. See those billions of stars and countless galaxies? Aren't those God's mansions in this universe? And if we are in a timeless eternity, won't a trip from here to a star in the Horsehead Nebula be instantaneous? Astrophysicists envision worm holes or some other form of faster-than-light travel to get man to the stars. Neither will be necessary when time no longer exists for us.

1 Cor 2:9 “Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him.”

The most important thing we can learn from multiples is how close we are to that spiritual world. Oh, we Christians give lip-service to its existence, but we think that world is way out in space somewhere. We also say we believe in angels and demons, but only in a nebulous way. We don't see them as real living beings, separated from us only by an invisible wall that God doesn't allow us penetrate. We also think of Jesus in the abstract, way up in heaven with God the Father, and that's got to be a zillion miles away.

The multiples have opened our eyes. Many of them see, talk to and touch Jesus and His angels every day. They drink from the Fountain of Life and destroy demons with its living water. If we could go through that wall, we could talk to those angels, too, and even ask one for manna. We could watch them as they minister to the Lord of Glory. We could see Jesus ourselves and touch the hem of His garment. He's right there you know, standing beside that fountain, shining. Can't you see the holes in His hands like the alters do?

I guess not, for us that wall is there. Seeing inside isn't what the Lord ordained for us monominds. That privilege is reserved for the horribly abused children who were driven into multiplicity. God wills for us to “walk by faith and not by sight” (2 Cor 5:7). Oh, Jesus the Shining Man, is just beyond that wall alright, but in this age we talk to Him through prayer and He answers us through His Word.

It was a privilege to work with multiples. How many of us get to tag along with them as they find their fountain, meet the Shining Man, and do battle against the dark forces that attack us all?

Not many, so the ministry goes on . . .

FINIS

ABOUT LIGHTHOUSE

The *Lighthouse* chatroom was intended to be a safe haven for people with multiple personalities. As elskon, I was its first host. We used to joke in *Lighthouse* that we might have only 20 guests at one time, but 50 people talking. As word spread of the freedom in Christ that could be found there, we were counseling so many multiples that hosting became an impossible burden. Margrit KS (screen name Noksie) then took over the room. She'd been helping in the room for some time so the multiples accepted her without difficulty.

Most multiples came to *Lighthouse* for companionship, fun or a listening ear. If a disruptive alter came out of some system and was disorderly, the regulars knew we could handle the problem without criticism or reprimand. This kept the room relatively peaceful. The multiples so trusted *Lighthouse* that they even allowed their beloved "littles" (their child alters) to play there.

Every night at 10:00pm we had a children's hour during which Bible stories were read. The littles loved the question & answer period that followed. You haven't heard anything until you've been in chatroom filled with child alters, all wanting to talk at once. Littles from various systems could get together there and have the kind of fun that would have been dangerous for them in any other room on the net. Watching one little lead another to the fountain and to Jesus was a thing of beauty to behold. Most littles loved Jesus.

As *Lighthouse* became more popular and crowded, additional hosts were allowed to help. A late night chatroom was opened to take over after *Lighthouse* closed. It worked for a while, but as you have read in this book, our methods were a bit radical for many so they went elsewhere. After three years, both Noksie and I were burned out so the room was allowed to close.

I met my first multiple about 10 years ago and have talked to many dozens since. My experiences lead me to believe that multiples cannot be made whole without the help of Jesus, the Shining Man. But helping multis requires dedication and one hour sessions every two weeks don't work. In my opinion, not more than two or three days should be allowed between chats and each chat needs to continue

until a logical stopping place is reached. This usually resulted in two hour chats, three times a week.

The Internet sure has its dangers and trust is a major factor. If a multiple doesn't completely trust you she might go to a satanic or a deliverance room to get a second opinion. Needless to say, *Lighthouse* was not popular with those folks, so the multiple's little jaunt there could irreparably damage any future relationship.

Some people who haunted *Lighthouse* couldn't see inside or do anything else that the average multiples could, nevertheless, they still claimed to be multiple. Guess what, if a person doesn't have the basic attributes that all multiples have, they aren't multiple, just a multiple wannabe. Thinking that some of the fakes might be real, I would always ask if they lost time, could hear voices or see inside, etc., etc. If they replied in the negative, I would ask what made them think they were multiple. Most said their therapist thought so.

Every alter is valuable in its own right and is an integral part of its whole system. Here's what can happen if a seemingly no-account alter is brushed aside: The psychiatrists at a hospital specializing in MPD thought a baby alter in one system was dead, so they tried to convince the rest of the alters to bury it. Fortunately, that multiple came to *Lighthouse* before buying a coffin because that baby turned out to be the birth-child.

At first you may need to aim the multiple in the right general direction, but they soon "get it." After that, the multi herself shows you what needs to be done in her system.

Though the use of weapons sent inside might be questioned by many, those weapons were very effective! I want to say it again in all caps: THOSE WEAPONS WERE VERY EFFECTIVE . . . and there's no arguing that the Water of Life killed darkones and healed alters. The multiples we worked with most closely still write, phone or visit. Happy monominds, living lives they never dreamed they could.

APPENDIX A

The following prayer of renunciation has been said by many troubled or demonized multiples. Following the prayer is the testimony of one multiple who used it to good effect .

This prayer is not a magic bullet and every contingency could not be covered in one prayer. But despite its shortcomings, it has helped many alters gain freedom from demonic control. One MUST pray the following OUT LOUD. While doing so, evil spirits inside (if any) will get angry and try to stop you. Do not believe a thing they say or try to do. It will be only an illusion – smoke and mirrors. Stay focused and continue to read. Don't stop! You may not think every word applies to you, but because of possibly blocked memories, don't skip any words. Every word should be prayed OUT LOUD . . .

In the name of Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh, all evil spirits, you are commanded to remain totally silent in my mind. In Jesus' name you are also commanded not to interfere in any way with my reading or saying out loud every word that is in this prayer.

Dear Lord Jesus, I declare my faith in You. I am coming to You, for Your help. Your Word states, "For he shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways." May it be so in accordance with Thy Word as I read my confession.

Lord Jesus, I accept Your death on the Cross as full satisfaction unto God the Father for my sins. I ask You to come into my heart and be Lord of my life.

I know that You, God and Father, "have put all things under Jesus feet, and given Him to be the head over all things," (Ephesians 1:19-22). And that You, Lord Jesus, are "far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come:"

Since I have confessed You as my Lord, I know that I am Your child and that “the evil one cannot touch me.” That “nothing can pluck me out of Your hand.”

Your Word states, 1 John 1:9 “If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us *our* sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.” So please forgive and cleanse me for everything I am about to declare, for “without You I can do nothing.”

Both I and my alters are bought by the blood Jesus shed on the Cross. According to Your word in 1 John 5:16 “If any man see his brother sin a sin which is not unto death, he shall ask, and he shall give him life for them that sin not unto death.”

All my alters cannot come out to pray, and some have little or no knowledge of You, but in accordance with 1 John 5:16 just quoted, I ask You, Lord Jesus, to please accept my confession, not only for me, but on behalf of all my alters.

First: I confess the sins of our ancestors and any demonic assignments they may have laid upon me. I also confess any satanic or occult rituals they may have said over me or that I may have been a party to. Dear Jesus, please forgive me for any and all ancestral and demonic assignments, and cover them with Your blood.

Second: I confess that my body has been used as an instrument of unrighteousness, and Lord Jesus, I don't remember it all, but I ask You forgive me for all those acts - both remembered and unremembered - I recognize them as sin and ask You to forgive me for them all. Please also forgive me for all alcohol and other substance abuses.

Third: Lord Jesus, Your Word that states, Lev 20:27 “A man that hath a familiar spirit, or that is a wizard, shall surely be put to death.” And in Exo 22:18 “Thou shalt not suffer a witch to live.” I may have consorted with the devil and his angels and been involved in satanic or occult rituals. I know these to be grievous sins in Your eyes. I am truly sorry. I confess them as sin and ask You, Lord Jesus, to forgive me for any such activity and to cover it with Your shed blood.

Forth: I confess that I have been the participant in sex acts outside of marriage. Please forgive me, Lord Jesus, for those immoral acts and cover them with Your blood.

Fifth: In the past, I have not accepted (by faith) that Jesus took all my guilt and punishment on the Cross, and that “there is therefore now no condemnation to them who are in Christ Jesus.” Please forgive me for my lack of faith in not accepting Your sacrifice on the Cross as

full payment for my sins. I also ask You to forgive and cover with Your blood any sins that I may not remember at this time.

Sixth: If there is anyone I have not forgiven for sins committed against me, I confess that unforgiveness as sin and I forgive them now. Please forgive me for my unforgiving heart.

Seventh: Also, please forgive me for any anger or bitterness that I hold against anyone. I give all destructive feelings to You now.

I am a child of God, bought by the blood that Jesus shed on the Cross. In the Name of Jesus Christ, I confess and totally renounce every one of the above sins and any like them. I turn away from them totally and will do them no more.

I totally renounce any past or present association with Satan, his angels and all of his works. I renounce any satanic rituals I may have said. I totally renounce all sexual immorality, all demonic assignments, all occult practices, witchcraft, satanism, and any master other than the Lord Jesus Christ.

I renounce all sins of anger, malice, unforgiveness and bitterness that I hold against anyone.

I renounce all pre-marital sex and all alcohol and drug abuse. I renounce any unforgiveness or bitterness I hold against anyone. I renounce every sin that is against a Holy God and against His beloved Son Jesus.

Evil spirits, the sins that gave you access are all now confessed and renounced and you are trespassers. In the name of Jesus Christ, every evil spirit given access through these confessed sins is commanded to depart from me at once, never to return.¹

Hello Elskon;

“We knew the dark ones would be angry and try to stop us from saying it and we were afraid they would take control and harm the body so we went outside into the middle of a field near our house. Nancy and Marcia (and perhaps Glow although she wasn’t around at the time) were the only Christians so they took the outside together. Defenders lined up in three rows of four across, inside to protect them from assaults and prevent

¹ The biblical principles summarized in this prayer are fully explained in *The Bondage Breaker* by Dr. Neil T. Anderson. I have been using these principles with great success for over 20 years.

the body being taken over. We put the children and other weak ones in the village into one big building so we could protect them and stop them being attacked as a decoy.

“They prayed the prayer, renouncing involvements in all the major occult activities we had memories of. We noticed there were winged ones from the High Council of Light as we called them (at that time we didn’t know they were angels) inside watching us. We were worried they would disapprove of us attempting to change the make-up of the system but we also knew that if we did nothing, the dark ones would not stop until we were either dead or back with the cult, so we kept going.

“We lost three protectors and at one stage had to pull Nancy in for safety because too much darkness was getting through to her and she wasn’t as strong as Marcia. Marcia continued praying and after she finished we actually saw four dark ones leave. A presence that we hadn’t even been aware of before, lifted from the village and we saw what real light was. Outside, Marcia saw them shake the branches of a tree, the grass in one place turned burnt black in front of her as they tried to intimidate her but she kept praying, by now realising we had won, and they eventually left her alone.

“We were ecstatic and many others, who had previously been too scared to commit to Jesus and to this process, changed their minds. The village began to change almost immediately. The village was markedly lighter and warmer, a garden grew up on the chasm side of the village and we found it protected us from the toxic black fog that used to come up from the chasm and knock people out. It was also effective in healing people, just by being in it. Life suddenly seemed so much more promising.”

Rhonda

APPENDIX B

For us, a good knowledge of Scripture was absolutely necessary in our counseling. Below are the most frequently used verses and commands, but it is far from an exhaustive list. We kept them in memory so we could cut and paste, rather than type them out each time. They are not in alphabetical order, the most frequently used commands appear first.

LIGHT

Gen 1:3 And God said, Let there be light: and there was light.

Psa 119:105 Thy word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path.

Psa 119:130 The entrance of thy words giveth light; it giveth understanding unto the simple.

TEST for DEMONS

I am now going to see if any alters are actually darkones in disguise. Please keep the door open now so all inside can hear. You listen carefully, OK?

In the name of Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh, any evil spirit disguised as an alter, you are commanded to identify yourself, first by your alter's name and then by your actual name.

In the name of Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh, all evil spirits you are commanded to identify yourself by your actual name.

SILENCE

In the name of Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh, all evil spirits, you are commanded to remain totally silent unless commanded to speak.

SEND ANGELS

Dear Lord Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh, please send Your holy warrior angels to help us in accordance with Your word. Thank you Lord Jesus, Amen.

Psa 91:11-12 For he shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways. They shall bear thee up in their hands, lest thou dash thy foot against a stone.

Dear Lord Jesus, please send healing angels to help the injured ones. Thank you Lord Jesus, Amen.

DISCOMFORT

In the name of Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh, all evil spirits, you are commanded not to harm the body in any way or cause it any pain or discomfort.

CONTROL

In the name of Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh, all evil spirits, you are commanded to STOP controlling the body.

In the name of Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh, all evil spirits you are commanded to release control of the body back to _____. .

COMMUNICATIONS

In the name of Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh, all evil spirits you are commanded not to in any way interfere with communications.

ILLUSIONS

In the name of Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh, all evil spirits, you are commanded to remove all your blocks and all your illusions.

SLEEPY

In the name of Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh, all evil spirits, you are commanded to stop making the body feel sleepy or tired.

Eph 5:14 Wherefore he saith, Awake thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light.

FEAR

In the name of Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh, all evil spirits, you are commanded to stop causing any fear or uneasiness in _____ at once.

WHAT'S NEXT?

OK, now ask Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh what He wants you to do next.

Make sure he declares "Jesus Christ is come in the flesh" BEFORE you listen to him.

He must declare EXACTLY and clearly. If He does not so declare, he is a false jesus. Wet him down immediately with your water gun.

RESTRAINING

Alters are only restrained in the fountain for one of four reasons.

1. If they are suicidal.
2. If they are hurting the body.
3. If they are hurting other alters inside.
4. If they have darkones who are fighting angels and those darkones are trying to get the alter to flee into darkness.

However, they are only restrained until their dangerous spiritual condition is corrected. Then Jesus sets them free.

FREEING

All Christian defenders say the following over _____ in unison, and kill whatever comes out. Keep doing it until she looks totally normal.

"In the name of Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh, all evil spirits you are commanded to come out of _____ at once."

Shoot quick with your water blasters, some of those darkones are pretty swift and if any of them get away you will just have to fight them again later.

After her skin looks totally normal, give her a cup of hyssop tea to drink and she must stay in the fountain for another half an hour. Then take her to Jesus.

SELF FREEING

Tell her to say the following "I have now confessed, renounced and given all my sins to Jesus, so all evil spirits you are now trespassers. In the name of Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh, all evil spirits you are commanded to leave me at once, never to return."

JESUS ALWAYS WITH US

Jesus is there somewhere, He promised "I will never leave you nor forsake you, even unto the end of the world," so He is there! Look around. When you see Him, make sure he says, "Jesus Christ is come if the flesh."

FOUNTAIN TIME.

Everyone should have at least ½ hour a day in the fountain. Everyone should also drink at least 1 cup of hyssop tea a day.

TRUTH

OK, all of you pray out loud in unison, “Dear Lord Jesus, you are truth and we want to see truth.. Please take away anything that is not of truth and reveal to us those things that are true.”

FLASHBACKS

I see. Well ask her to step into the fountain for a while and hand those flashbacks up to Jesus. He will put them in her memory box and we can deal with them later.

PROGRAMMING

Please say inside and outside the following verses. They must be said out loud . . .

2 Cor 10:5 Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ.

Col 2:14-15 Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his (Jesus') cross; And having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a show of them openly, triumphing over them in it.

STRENGTH

2 Tim 1:7 For God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind.

Isa 40:31 But they that wait upon the LORD shall renew their strength; they shall mount up with wings as eagles; they shall run, and not be weary; and they shall walk, and not faint.

Deu 31:8 And the LORD, he it is that doth go before thee; he will be with thee, he will not fail thee, neither forsake thee: fear not, neither be dismayed.

TEST of SPIRITS

1 John 4:1 Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world.

1 John 4:2 Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God:

1John 4:3 And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist,

whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world.

ARMOR

Please state exactly: "Jesus Christ is come in the flesh." Stating that correctly is understood as your giving a full commitment to joining Jesus' service. I will wait while you type it back to me.

First the Instructions. . . .

Eph 6:10-11 Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might. Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil.

Eph 6:12-13 For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places. Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand.

Now for the Armor Itself. . . .

Put each piece on as I tell you of it. It is very light and invulnerable to darkones.

Eph 6:14 Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, and having on the breastplate of righteousness;

Eph 6:15 And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace;

Eph 6:16 Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked.

Eph 6:17 And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God:

Eph 6:18 Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints;

AUTHORITY

Eph 1:19-20 And what is the exceeding greatness of his (God's) power to usward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power, Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places,

Eph 1:21-23 Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but

also in that which is to come: And hath put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things to the church, Which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all.

Phil 2:8-9 And being found in fashion as a man, he (Jesus) humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross. Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name:

Phil 2:10-11 That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

WEAPONS

PUNJI STAKES

Here are 10,000 three foot punju stakes. That is enough to surround your whole camp in overlapping rows They are made of stone and razor sharp. On each stake is engraved "The Word of God is sharper than any two edged sword."

If anyone who does not belong to Jesus even touches a stake, those stakes will cut him to ribbons. Stick them 18" into the ground facing outward at a 45 degree angle, sort of like this // // // // // . It will make a barrier impossible for enemies of God to pass through, but since you all love God's word, you all can walk right through them without even getting a scratch.

WATER RIFLE

A radio station can broadcast a Gospel message, but that station is only the messenger. It is the Gospel that saves. In the same way, a water rifle is only an efficient way to get water to the target. It is living water itself that has power over the enemy. Here is where it is from . . .

Rev 22:1, 6 And he showed me a pure river of Water of Life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb. And he said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the Water of Life freely.

Darkones can't stand that. So here is the new water rifle. It is filled with the Water of Life. Living Water is a deadly weapon against darkones.

It has a single shot and a spray setting (little flip lever on the side). Spray covers a large area, the single shot setting is actually a water bullet. These water-guns can shoot a spray of water 50 feet, and a water bullet 100 ft.

It comes with a 2 gallon backpack that is filled with living water from the Fountain of Life. The pack holds enough water to kill hundreds of darkones and it is refillable.

GRENADES

Here are 250 darkone-activated grenades and a bag to carry them in. The grenades are about the size of a golf ball, but lighter. When darkones comes close to one, it shines the brilliant light of God's Word on them, 7 times brighter than day. The verses the grenades contain are Philippians 2:8-11. The light of those verses is deadly to darkones.

Phil 2:8-11 And being found in fashion as a man, he (Jesus) humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross. Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name: That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

BOWS

Here are a dozen compound recurve bows with 60 pound draw. Using water or fire arrows, these bows have a maximum range of 250 yards. Here are 500 water-filled arrows. They are best against ordinary darkones and shadows. Here also are 200 fire arrows. They are best against dragons or Caulda, though most systems don't have any. Here also are 100 practice arrows. Save the fire and water arrows for battle.

Here are three targets. Set one up at 75 yards, the next at 125 yards and the third at 175 yards. have the archers practice until they can hit the bull's-eye consistently at all three distances. That's as good as the English archers did at Agincourt, but with practice, your archers can do it, too.

FINIS